Golden Palaung

A grammatical description

Pandora Mak

A-PL 003 / SEAMLES 002

This is a grammar of Golden Palaung (Saam-Loong) according to data elicited, collected, and analyzed between July 2010 to May 2012. It is an Austroasiatic (Mon-Khmer) language spoken in the Namhsan area, Northern Shan State, Myanmar. The grammar is written primarily for the language community, using common terminology and local orthography as well as phonetic notation. It is supplemented with a lexicon of Golden Palaung occurring in the textual examples.

Asia-Pacific Linguistics
Open Access Monographs
_____

SEAsian Mainland Languages E-Series (SEAMLES)

Acknowledgements

Pandora Mak
Yangon, Myanmar
May 2012

Contents

Abbreviations

Example Reference

2M	The story 'အာကူးဂါရဲအာအံပ်' – 1132 words
Ab	The story 'အဘ္ဘူတ်' – 545 words
AbR	The story 'အဘ္ဘူတ်' (ed.) – 546 words
Couple	The text 'တဗျောဂါရဲယာယာ,' – 1291 words
Dict	Palaung-Burmese Dictionary 2003
Est	The story 'ယာခုန်ဟျောခံမ် အဲဆထံရဲ' – 4268 words
GF	The story 'နှာင်ကာဒြိရဲ' – 1649 words
M	Palaung Magazine 1999
MG	Examples from Milne's grammar
Pock	The text 'အဘြိင်ကာမ်လ' – 3351 words
WL	1655-word list
WS	The story 'ဟျောည်�‌ဘွော,' (transcribed from Milne's original) – 2726 words
WSR	The story 'အပူမ် ဟျောည်ဘွော,' (first rewrite) – 1850 words
WSR2	The story 'အပူမ် ဟျောည်ဘွော,' (second rewrite) – 4630 words

Word Class

adj	adjective	n-ref	referential noun
adj-qual	qualitative adjective	n-spat	spatial noun
adj-quan	quantitative adjective	n-temp	temporal noun
adj-stat	stative adjective	nclass	noun classifer
adv	adverb	neg	negator
adv-cl	clause adverb	num	numeral
adv-deg	degree adverb	num.card	cardinal
adv-mann	manner adverb	num.ord	ordinal
adv-mood	mood adverb	onom	onomatopoeic word
adv-scope	scope adverb	plmk	dual/plural marker
aux-asp	aspect auxiliary verb	prn	pronoun
aux-cap	capability auxiliary verb	prn-dem	demonstrative pronoun
aux-intent	intention auxiliary verb	prn-emb	embedded pronoun
card-coeff	cardinal coefficient	prn-indef	indefinite pronoun
card-place	cardinal place	prn-per	personal pronoun
conn-cl	clause connective	prn-refl	reflexive personal pronoun
conn-ph	phrase connective	prt-mood	mood particle
dem	demonstrative	prt-n	nominal particle
interj	interjection	prt-q	question particle
interrog	interrogative	prt-struc	structural particle
meas-act	action measure	prt-v	verbal particle
meas-coll	collective measure	quan-indef	indefinite quantifier
meas-ind	individual measure	quan-interrog	interrogative quantifier
meas-metro	metrologic measure	vdir	directive verb
meas-temp	temporal measure	vi	intransitive verb
n	noun, common noun	vi-pass	passive verb

n-abstr	abstract noun	vlink	linking verb
n-coll	collective noun	vt	transitive verb
n-prop	proper noun		

Grammatical Structure/Construction

ANALOG	analogic	GEN	generalizative
AP	adjective phrase	HM	head-modifier
APP	apposition	NP	noun phrase
CAUSE	causative	PROG	progressive
CHRON	chronological	QP	quantifier phrase
Cl	clause	RNP	referential noun phrase
CONCS	concessive	SELECT	selective
COND	conditional	Sent	sentence
CONTR	contrastive	SM	supplement-main
COOR	corrdinative,coordination	SP	subject-predicate
CpCl	compact clause	VO	verb-object
EmCl	embedded clause	VP	verb phrase
EmCl-temp	temporal embedded clause	VV	verb chain

1 *Introduction*

Golden Palaung[1], with ISO 639-3 language code as *pll*, is a language spoken mainly among the 127 villages in Namhsan area, Northern Shan State, Myanmar, with quite an amount of speakers scattering around some major cities in Myanmar and a small portion of speakers in Yunnam Province, China. It has an estimated population of over 100,000 but no more than 150,000 altogether. Roughly speaking, it belongs to Palaungic group of Mon-Khmer branch in Austro-Asiatic family. It is presumably slotted in Palaung-Riang sub-group, though a detailed classification of this language cluster seems unsettled yet. An extensive, thorough language survey of that area is still necessary to determine the true picture.

From the view of knowledgeable insiders, there are thirteen dialects[2] in Palaung. These thirteen 'dialects' are classified according to a combination of their languages, clothing, culture, etc. and primarily named by their geographical locations. Even though it seems well-known among outsiders to categorize Palaungs into Golden Palaung, Ru-Jing, and Ru-Mai,[3] there is a trend started by the insider leaders in Namhsan area, the centre of Golden Palaung, to abandon the conventional usage of 'Golden Palaung' as a sub-group name for those 'dialects' other than Ru-Mai and Ru-Jing. A perception has been gradually spread in the area that there is only one Palaung ethnic group but Palaung people speak thirteen 'dialects.' Though its speaking population may be the least comparing to other Palaung dialects, claiming high prestige, Saam-Loong (ဆာမ်လ္လှိုင် ; SL)[4] is considered the central dialect and is

---

[1] There is a variety of names referring to the same people. Other than Golden Palaung, there are Shwe Palaung, Ta'ang, etc. 'Shwe' is a transliteration of the Burmese word ရွှေ , which means 'gold,' attached to the group name because of the golden thread of their costume and the golden earrings or other golden ornaments worn by the women of this people. 'Palaung' is transliterated from the people group name in Burmese ပလောင်, which is the name widely used by outsiders, including Myanmar and westerners; 'Ta'ang' တအာင်း /taʔaŋ/ is how the insiders identify themselves and is the same as their official name in China, that is 德昂 (Déáng), since 17th September 1985 when the Chinese government abandoned the outsider address 崩龍 or 崩龙 (Bēnglóng), which someone pronounce it [poŋ.loŋ] in Yunnan accent(?), to this ethnic group. As the potential readers of this paper are mainly westerners and English readers, the English name 'Golden Palaung' is used instead of the others.

    Plang (or Blang) is sometimes confused with Palaung by some outsiders. Plang 布朗 (Bùlǎng) is another officially recognized ethnic group in China. Its main population is deemed to be in mainland China. Its language belongs to the same group of Golden Palaung, which is Palaungic group of Mon-Khmer branch in Austro-Asiatic family. Plang is usually grouped with Waic languages in the group, while Golden Palaung is usually in Palaung-Riang sub-group.

[2] It is believed that, among these thirteen dialects, some are closer to one another that they are really dialects; some are more different from the others that they may be different languages. A rough estimate in basic vocabulary is less than 70% cognate among Saam-Loong, Ru-Mai, and Ru-Jing, and maybe more than 70% cognate between Saam-Loong, Ru-Mai, or Ru-Jing and the others. There may be more (or less?) languages or dialects beyond these thirteen. Further investigation will determine the actual reality of this cluster.

[3] 'Ngwe Palaung' (or 'Silver Palaung') and 'Pale Palaung' (or 'Pearl Palaung') are also popular, among outsiders, in classification of Palaung according to the ornaments. (In fact, Golden Palaung women also wear silver and pearl ornaments.) Some use 'Ngwe Palaung' for Ru-Jing Palaung and some for all unclassified Palaungs other than Golden Palaung, Ru-Mai Palaung, and Ru-Jing Palaung. Some use 'Pale Palaung' for Ru-Jing Palaung and some see it a sub-branch of Ru-Jing Palaung. In China, there is another set of classification among Palaungs mainly according to the colour of their costume, like Red Palaung, Black Palaung, etc.

[4] The name ဆာမ်လွိုင် /sam.loŋ/ is how the insiders call their language. The word is from Shan, literally meaning 'three-great (things)' that is land, water, and wind (air). Saam-Loong's high prestige is mainly

promoted to the lingua franca or common language among those 'dialects' besides Ru-Jing and Ru-Mai or even among the whole Palaung ethnic group, just like Putonghua in mainland China. In short, Golden Palaung is to be replaced by Saam-Loong, in terms of nomination and representativeness. Apparently, the Palaung Literature and Culture Central Committee has been making effort in standardizing the language . Saam-Loong differs from other dialects phonetically and in vocabulary, but seems to share a similar grammar. People in town and other at least twenty-four main villages in the area speak Saam-Loong. People often refer Saam-Loong as 'the language of this/that side,' which refers to 'the language of the village/town area (ဇိင်ရျ /ɟəŋ.ru/ "quater-village").'[5] This grammar will focus on Saam-Loong (GP [SL]).

Grammatically, GP (SL) is an analytic language that word forms do not change according to their grammatical functions, which are shown syntactically by word order and the use of function words. Its basic subject-verb-object (SVO) word order, however, can be re-organized so as to emphasize a topic in a clause or discourse that makes it a topic-prominent language also. The topic can be the subject, the verb, the object, or the adjunct of a clause, or even a clause of a sentence. Its topicalization is usually done by using a clause constituent called RECAP or by fronting the related clause constituent. The former way may be more for discourse level topic; the latter way more for clause level topic. If there is no explicit topicalization in a clause, the topic probably is the same as the subject.

In contrast to indicating time, gender, and number by inflection in synthetic languages, GP (SL) does not have the time of an action or state indicated by tense of a verb, but by temporal nouns and related nominal constructions. Aspect of an event is marked by aspect auxiliary verbs or shown by related verbs. Gender of an item is not marked in general. It is occasionally packed with other sememes in particular words. Duality and plurality of an item is not necessarily marked and can be indicated by nominal particles.

The language is productive in word formation and phrase formation by putting components in several structural relationships, such as coordination, head-modifier, supplement-main, verb-object, subject-predicate, etc. There is an appealing gravity to clause and word, that are two pivots of GP (SL) grammar. Hence, this presentation will start from clause that is the most central part in language use for communication. Clause structure and constituents first will be discussed and then clause type, followed by an illustration of clause extension. Next, word will be studied in details, followed by a discussion on word extension.

GP (SL) has several grammatical phenomena worthy of attention and further study. Embedment can occur on different levels of phrase, clause, and sentence. Reduplication of morphemes and words forms particular patterns that makes special effects and rhymes. These features may make the language diversified, lively, and rich. Besides, omitting clause constituent and fronting clause constituent are also noteworthy. These phenomena will be discussed in the last four chapters accordingly. A GP (SL) lexicon including vocabulary from the examples used in this grammar will be attached in appendix.

This grammar is intended to be simple and plain in presentation that, hopefully, readers, even those who do not have very much linguistics background, may find it readable and useful. This report aims at presenting a big picture about the structure of the language, rather than displaying any sophisticated linguistics theory that no separate chapter is to explain the grammatical analysis model used. It is merged in the grammatical description of the language already with examples. Formulae, however, are supplied to summarize the structures in the beginning of major section divisions, that is 4. Clause Structure, 7. Extension of Clause, 8. Word Structure, and 10. Extension of Word. The key to read the formulae is put in the footnote for the first formula. Besides, reviewing charts are provided at the end of

---

because it is the language of the ပုရ်မာင် /pʌr.maŋ/ (စော်ဘွား /sɔ.bwa:/ in Burmese) 'the chief of noble clan or prince [in Shan]'), who possesses those three great things, they believe.

5 This is to contrast with 'the language of the forest area (ဇိင်နိင် /ɟəŋ.nəŋ/ "quater-forest"),' which is an important Golden Palaung dialect named ဇယန်းကြီး /za.jan:.ɲi:/ in Burmese and is a covering term for the dialects of the area starting at the village of the same name and extending away from the town or central village.

various sections. Examples in this grammar are given in an interlinear format with a line of GP (SL) in Burmese script and a line of corresponding almost phonemic IPA transcription followed by a line of gloss and a line of free translation. In between the gloss and the free translation, additional lines of grammatical information are furnished wherever appropriate.

The analysis is based on several texts, including a revised version of M. L. Milne's 'The White Water-snail.'[6] Most of the others are elicited, recorded, and transcribed from native speakers in Namhsan, the central town. A few of them are taken from a GP (SL) magazine published in 1999, Palaung-Burmese Dictionary reprinted in 2003, and a collection of GP (SL) creative short stories and rewrites of Palaung traditional stories done by an educated native literate. A 1655-word list elicited from another educated local leader is made a good reference especially to word analysis. In the later stage of writing, the not-yet published manuscript of Burmese-Ta'ang (Saam-Loong, Ru-Mai, and Ru-Jing) Tetralingual Lexicon also became a reference.

---

[6] M. L. Milne, 1921, 'The White Water-snail,' in An Elementary Palaung Grammar, London: Oxford, 146-187. The original is transcribed with the current GP (SL) orthography, which is in Burmese script, and some Shan loan words used in the text are substituted by GP (SL) vocabulary. It is rewritten by a local literate that a revised version is created.

2 *Orthography*

Golden Palaung (Saam-Loong) has its current orthography in Burmese script. This writing system has been in use since 1972. Beforehand, according to knowledgeable insiders and their official documents, from the beginning of twentieth century, there were at least thirteen attempts to invent Palaung writing system, using different alphabets, such as Roman, Mon, Shan, Yün, Tai, P'oo, etc., by people from five nationalities, including American, British, Shan, Thai, and Palaung of different areas. As scattering among mountains, Palaung people were difficult to have their writing system unified that a literature committee was formed in 1965. Without specific achievement, this committee was re-formed as a literature and culture committee in 1967 and worked on unifying writing system. After some five years, the current orthography came. In the following forty years, there might be minor changes but it seems solidified now. Here is a table showing equivalence of the current orthography (B) to an almost phonemic representation in IPA (P) and Milne's writing system (M).

B	P	M	B	P	M	B	P	M
က	k	k	ဝ	v	v	◌�ော	ʌ	ọ/ọ̄
ခ	kʰ	k˙	◌	f	f	◌	ʌ	a/ặ/ō̄/ị̄/āū
ချ	cʰ	ch	သ	h	h	◌	ai	--
ဂ	g	g	အ	?		-က်	-k	-k
င	ŋ	ng	ြ◌	-r-	-r-	-င်	-ŋ	-ng
စ	c	ch/ty/j	◌	-l-	-l-	-◌်	-j	-i/-ī/-ɛ
ဆ	s	s˙/sh	◌	-	h-	-တ်	-t	-t
ဈ	ʃ	--	◌	-j-	-y-	-န်	-n	-n
ဇ	ɟ	j	◌	-w-	-w-/-wọ̄-	-ပ်	-p	-p
ဈ	z	--	◌	ə	ā̞/ă/ặ/e/ọ	-မ်	-m	-m
ည	ɲ	ny	◌	a·	a/ạ/ā/ă	-ဝ်	-ɛ	-ɛ̄
တ	t	t	◌	a	ā	-ရ်	-r	-r
ထ	tʰ	t˙	◌	i·	ī/ĭ/īk	-ရ့်	-r̥	--
ဒ	d	d	◌	i	ī/ị̄	-ဝ်	-w	-u
န	n	n	◌	u·	ō/ū	-◌ဝ်	-ɯ	-ük/-ō̄
ပ	p	p	◌	u	ū/ō	-◌ဝ်	-ɤ	-ü/-ū̄/-ō̄
ဖ	pʰ	p˙	◌	e	e/ē	-◌န်	-n	--
ဗ	b	b	◌	ɛ	ē/ɛ̄	◌	-?	˅
မ	m	m	◌	eɛ	--	◌	-ɣ	˅
ယ	j	y	◌	ɔ	ọ̄	◌	-ː	ˉ
ရ	r	r	◌	o	ō	◌	-h	-h
လ	l	l	◌	ɯ	ị̄/ō̄	◌	-ʌ	--
ဝ	w	u	◌	ɤ	ō̄/ū̄/ū			

N.B.: [1] Emptiness means 'unmarked.' [2] -- means 'not found.'

3 *Phonology Notes*

3.1. Syllable Structure

Golden Palaung (Saam-Loong) has pre-syllable and main syllable. Pre-syllable has a structure of C_pV_p. C_p is found limited to mainly voiceless stops, voiceless sibilant, lateral, and trill. Voiced stop and voiced nasal can be found occasionally in loan words. V_p is always the half-long open central vowel, which is always reduced to schwa [ə] in actual articulation. Here is a summary for pre-syllable.

Pre-syllable structure: C_pV_p

C_p: ပ /p/, ဖ /pʰ/, တ /t/, စ /c/, က /k/, ခ /kʰ/, အ /ʔ/, သ /s/, လ /l/, ရ /r/; ယ /ɟ/, မ /m/

V_p: ◌ /aˑ/

Main syllable has a structure of $C_1V(C_2)$. C_1 is obligatorily and can be any consonant in the language. Consonant cluster of limited combination can be found in C_1 but never in C_2. C_2 is optional and can only be voiceless unreleased stop and voiceless fricative in particular places of articulation, nasal, trill, and semi-vowel. Here are four charts illustrating the possible sounds for C_1, V, and C_2.

3.2. Consonants and Vowels

Table 1: Consonants / Initial Consonants (Onset; C1) in GP (SL)

B					P				
ပ	တ	စ	က	အ	p	t	c	k	ʔ
ဖ	ထ	ဆ	ခ		pʰ	tʰ	cʰ	kʰ	
ဗ	ဒ	ဇ	ဂ		b	d	ɟ	g	
◌				ဿ	f				h
◌					v				
	ဿ	ဆ			s	ʃ			
◌	◌	◌	◌		m̥	n̥	ɲ̥	ŋ̥	
◌	◌	◌	◌		m	n	ɲ	ŋ	
	◌				l̥				
	◌				l				
	◌				r̥				
	◌				r				
		◌	◌				ȷ̊	w̥	
		◌	◌				j	w	

N.B.: For some speakers, voiceless bilabial stop /p/ and voiceless alveolar stop /t/ are pronounced as implosive with the same place of articulation and voicing, that is [ɓ] and [ɗ]. It may be influenced by Ru-Jing or other neighbouring related languages.

Table 2: Consonant Cluster in Onset (C1) in GP (SL)

The C_i onset consonants (B = Burmese script header; P = phonetic value):

C_{ii}	C_{iii}	p	pʰ	b	t	tʰ	d	c	ɟ	k	kʰ	g	v	s	m	n	ɲ	ŋ	l	r	ʔ	h	j
l		pl	pʰl	bl						kl	kʰl	gl											
r		pr	pʰr	br	tr	tʰr	dr			kr	kʰr	gr			mr							r̥	
	j	pj	pʰj	bj	tj	tʰj	dj			kj	kʰj	gj	vj	sj	mj	nj		ŋj	lj	rj	ʔj	j	
	w	pw	pʰw	bw	tw	tʰw	dw	cw	ɟw	kw	kʰw	gw		sw	mw	nw	ɲw	ŋw	lw	rw	ʔw	w̥	jw
l	j	plj	pʰlj	blj						klj	kʰlj	glj											
l	w	plw	pʰlw	blw						klw	kʰlw	glw											
r	j	prj	pʰrj	brj						krj	kʰrj	grj			mrj							hrj	

N.B.: There is over-representation in the current orthography that, theoretically, /r̥/ can be written as ဟြ or ရ̥ , /ɥ/ as ဟျ or ဝျ , and /ʍ/ as ဝွ or ဝ̥ . It is also mis-representation as, in fact, /r̥/, /ɥ/, and /ʍ/ are not consonant clusters per se but written in a form of consonant cluster ဟြ , ဟျ , and ဝွ which are more commonly used than ရ̥ , ဝျ , and ဝ̥ .

Table 3: Final Consonants (Coda; C2) in GP (SL)

B					P				
ပ်	တ်	(က်)		◌ ̣	p	t	(k)		ʔ
				◌း					h
မ်	န့်		င်		m	n		ŋ	
	ရ့်					r̥			
	ရ်					r			
	ည်		◌်				j	w	

N.B.: There is an exception of representing /w/ final by ◌် . When ◌် follows ◌̣ /ɯ/ or ◌̣ /ɤ/, it represents no sound. In the current orthography, there is always a final consonant following ◌̣ /ɯ/ and ◌̣ /ɤ/. That is, ◌̣ /ɯ/ and ◌̣ /ɤ/ are never in an open syllable in writing. When ◌̣ /ɯ/ and ◌̣ /ɤ/ are in an open syllable in articulation, they are written as ◌်/ɯ/ and ◌်/ɤ/. This is another over-representation in the current orthography. The Palaung Literature and Culture Central Committee is discussing whether to omit the ◌် /w/ final after ◌̣ /ɯ/ and ◌̣ /ɤ/.

Table 4: Vowels (V) in GP (SL)

B		P	
ᥲ̥ ᥲ	ᥲ̥ᵢ ᥲ̥ᵢᵢ ᥲ̥ᵢ	i i·	ɯ u u·
ေဥ	ᥲ̥ᵢᵢ ᥲ̥ᵢ	e	ɤ o
ေဥ̀	ᥲ̊	e͡ɛ ə	
ဥ̀	ᥲ̥ᵢ/ᥲ̊ᥴ ေဥ̃	ɛ	ʌ ɔ
ꩦ ᥲ̊		a a·	

N.B.: [1] ᥲ̥ᵢ /ɯ/ and ᥲ̊ᵢ /ɤ/ are advanced with tensed tongue root in articulation, as [ɯ̟] and [ɤ̟]. However, speakers in China have them pronounced as [ɯ] and [ɤ]. [2] There is a diphthong ᥲ̊ᥴ /ai/ found. It only occurs before voiced velar nasal -ᥴ̃ /ŋ/.

3.3. Some Simple Allophoney Rules

/p/ → [pˑ] → [ʔ] / ___]σ
    → [p] / elsewhere

/t/ → [tˑ] → [ʔ] / ___]σ
    → [t] / elsewhere

/k/ → [kˑ] → [ʔ] / ___]σ
    → [k] / elsewhere

/e/ → [eⁱ] / ___]σ
    → [e] / elsewhere

/o/ → [o·] / ___ /p/, /t/, /k/]σ
    → [o] / elsewhere

/ɔ/ → [ɔ·] / ___ /p/, /t/ or /k/]σ
    → [ɔ] / elsewhere

/ʌ/ → [ʌr] / ___]σ
    → [ʌʷ] / ___]σ (ᥲ̥ᥴᥲ̊ᥴ/ɟəŋ.nəŋ/ dialect)
    → [i] / ___ /m/, /n/, /ŋ/]σ
    → [ɑ] / ___ /ʔ/, /h/]σ
    → [ʌ] / elsewhere

/a·/ → [ə·] / pre-syllable
    → [a·] / elsewhere

N.B.: There is an obvious tendency of dropping /p/, /t/, and /k/ syllable finals and reducing them to [ʔ] in everyday speech, even though they are still there conceptually. This is probably affected by Burmese or other languages.

4   *Clause Structure*

In GP (SL), a clause can be illustrated in this formula, summarising its possible elements and configuration.

Clause =   P3: n-temp, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, NP, QP
      + P2: NP
      + P1: n, prn, NP
      + C: vi, vt, vdir, vlink, adj, VP(non-SP), AP
      + F1: n, prn, NP, Cl
      + F2: n, prn, prn-indef, n-spat, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, RNP, NP, QP [7]

A clause, which is composed of word and phrase, is an independent[8] basic unit of language use, conveying a complete message in a simple communication transaction. It is built by various constituents,[9] which are filled by different types of words[10] and phrases,[11] in particular positions. Among them, SUBJECT and PREDICATE are the two most significant ones. They define clause category. According to structure, GP (SL) has two main categories of clauses, namely SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause and non-SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause.

4.1. SUBJECT-PREDICATE Clause Structure
Despite the fact that both SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause (SP clause) and non-SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause are commonly used in actual speech, the former one is considered more typical than the latter one. Here is an example of a SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause.

---

[7] Here is the key to read the formulae in this paper. On the left-hand side of the equal sign, it is the construction or structure to be studied; on the right-hand side, the distribution classes according to their positions in the construction. The capital letter P, C, and F represent the positions. 'C' means central position, which is the core of the construction and is always filled. 'P' means preceding position, which comes before the central position; 'F' means following position, which comes after the central position. These prceding and following positions are optional and can be empty. If there is more than one preceding or following position, a number will be assigned after the position label, such as P1, P2, F1, F2, etc. The smaller the number, the closer the position to the central position. Usually, every position is filled once in every trace construction. If a position is filled more than once, a superscript 'n' will be added after the position label, such as $P3^n$, C^n, $F2^n$, etc. The colon after the position label shows the position is filled by the following distribution classes. The comma shows the different possible types of fillers for the same position. The plus sign links the distribution classes in their positions in order. If there is particular order among the distribution classes in particular position, it will be shown in square blankets with numbering of 1, 2, etc.

[8] This means that a clause is not necessarily included in another structure that it can be freely used on its own. In GP (SL), a clause can be embedded in a phrase. In this case, this embedded clause is not independent. See section 11.1. Clause-in-Phrase Embedding.

[9] See section 5. Clause Constituent.

[10] See section 9. Word Class.

[11] See section 10. Extension of Word.

M44-1.1	ဖျိရ်	အ္	တိုူ		တိုဝ်း	ငါမ်ပိုုး
	pʰjər	ʔu	to		tʏh	ŋam.poh
	bee	one	UNIT(animal,insect)		take	nectar
	NP				vt	n
	SUBJECT				PREDICATE	
	There was a bee taking nectar.					

SUBJECT and PREDICATE are two most significant constituents in clause formation.[12] SUBJECT-PREDICATE is basically a clause structure. However, besides making clauses, such a structure is also widely used as a part of a clause and even a phrase, with or without variation. This is one of the special features in GP (SL), which will be further discussed in section 8.2 Subject-Predicate Verbal Phrase and section 9.1.1 Clause-in-Phrase Embedding.

4.2. Non-SUBJECT-PREDICATE Clause Structure

Non- SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause (non-SP clause) is not a clause which omits SUBJECT or PREDICATE,[13] but has no certain SUBJECT or PREDICATE. There are two common kinds of non-SUBJECT-PREDICATE clauses. The first kind is *single-word/phrase clause*. It functions independently in a communication, even though usually it is very short, containing one or two words or a phrase that can be nominal, adjectival, adverbial, and interjectional. For example,

WS59.9   ဆဒေါ   အော
         sa·dɔ   ʔɔ
         jacket   1S
         NP
         My jacket!

WS12.5   တေင်လူးလူး
         teŋ.luh.luh
         shining yellow
         adj
         Very yellow!

WS8.2   ဟွည်းလ
         hwai·jˋ la·
         alright
         Interj
         Alright!

Ab2.15   ကာဘိုန်
         ka.bʏn
         cannot
         VP
         No!

M44-2.1   အေား
         ʔɔʌ
         Oh!
         Interj
         Oh!

---

[12]   See section 5. Clause Constituent.
[13]   Cf. chapter 12. Omitting Clause Constituent.

The second kind of non-SUBJECT-PREDICATE clauses is ***SUBJECTless***[14] ***clause***. It is composed of verb or verbal phrase without a specific SUBJECT or with no need to mention its SUBJECT. Here are some examples.

Ab1.1   ယှိ၁်   အဘ္ဘျ||တ်   ဒီန်
        jɤ   ʔaˑblutˋ   din
        find   The Liar   that
        vt   n   dem
        There was The Liar (a name).

WS25.3   ရဲ့ ့   ဂါင်   အာည်   လလ
        rɛʔ   gaŋ   ʔaj   laˑ.laˑ
        watch   house   1D (inclusive)   well
        vt   NP   adv-cl
        Watch well our house.

SPN5.1   ကာ   ဘ္ဘ်န်   တ်ိင်
        ka   bɤn   tɯŋ
        NEG (IND)   be allowed   cook
        neg   vi   vt
        No cooking.

---

[14]   Subject and predicate is a pair of interdependent, co-existing components. Theoretically, if there is no subject, there is no predicate, and vice versa. Therefore, strictly speaking, it is improper to use the term 'subjectless clause.' However, this term is used in this grammar for easy understanding.

5   *Clause Constituents*

Clause constituents are the elements that build a clause. Each constituent has its position and function, and is filled by particular grammatical forms and constructions. GP (SL) has eleven clause constituents, which can be grouped into main constituents, additional constituents, special constituents, and independent constituents. Here is a summary.[15]

Table 5: Groups of GP (SL) Clause Constituents

Group	Clause Constituent			
Main Constituents	subject	predicate central	complement	
Additional Constituents	attributive	pre-central modifier	post-central modifier	
Special Constituents	clause modifier	recap		
Independent Constituents	parenthesis	address	interjection	onomatapoeia

These constituents take particular positions to carry out their particular functions in a clause. Basically, it is the main constituents and the additional constituents which are primarily used in clause formation. That is, they take part in the clause central. Special constituents are useful in giving particular information related to the content of the message. Independent constituents enrich the communication with various features but completely independent to the clause structure. All these clause constituents function in clause, except additional constituents. ATTRIBUTIVE functions in noun phrase; PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER and POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER function in verbal phrase. Here is a table illustrating the position of clause constituents.

Table 6: Position of GP (SL) Clause Constituents

Clause									
Peripheral		Central						Peripheral	
CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE					CLAUSE MODIFIER	
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			COMPLEMENT			
Nominal Phrase	Nominal Phrase	Nominal Phrase	Verbal Phrase				Nominal Phrase	Nominal Phrase	
C. ATTRIBUTIVE	C. ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTR C. ATTR	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C.	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C. ATTRIBUTIVE		C. ATTRIBUTIVE	

---

[15] In this grammar, clause constituents are printed in small caps.

5.1. SUBJECT

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

SUBJECT is the target of PREDICATE, indicating whom or what PREDICATE represents. In GP (SL), SUBJECT generally is placed in the front and PREDICATE at its back. For example,

WS42.15

အော	ဒီ	ဇေင်
ʔɔ	di	veŋ
1S	WILL	move back (go/come)
prn-per	VP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	

I will go.

In GP (SL), SUBJECT is the most often filled by nominal forms such as noun, pronoun, and noun phrase, expressing the semantic functions of actor, sensory experiencer, processor, reactor, creator, communicator, owner, item attributed, identified, changed, etc. of a proposition. Here are some examples.[16]

WS3.1

နာင်	ရဆွိဝ်း
naŋ	raˑsɤh
queen	be awake, alert
n	vi
SUBJECT	PREDICATE

The queen woke up.

WS13.4

ဘိမ္မာှ်း	မည်	ကဖဲ့
bi.m̥ʌh	maˑj	kaˑvɛʔ
anybody	NEG(IMP)	play
prn-indef	VP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	

Don't play (with it).

WS49.1

အလံင်[17]	ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊	ရှိရ်	ဂါရ်	ကုိရ်ဟူ့ပ်	လှာ	ထာန်
ʔaˑləŋ	hɔj.blɔɤ	rʌr	gir	kʌr.hup	l̥a	tʰan
embryo Buddha	white water-snail	make	3D	hut	leaf	palm tree
NP		VP		NP		
SUBJECT		PREDICATE				

Embryo Buddha White Water-snail made for themselves a palm tree leaf hut.

---

[16] More examples can be found in section 5.2. PREDICATE.
[17] This may act as a title.

SUBJECT can also take noun groups in apposition. For example,

WSR17.1

မာ	အုန်ႏ	ယာဖၟည်	လၟးၟ		ပဲၟႏ	ဂါရ	ဟောမ်	ပ္လွ
ma	ʔʌn	ja.pʰaj	lʌh		pɛh	gar	hɔm	ple
mother	3S	ogress	move to (go)		pick	3D	eat	fruit
NP		n	VP					n
APP								
SUBJECT			PREDICATE					

His mohter, the ogress, went to pick fruits for them to eat.

Usually, GP (SL) clauses have simple subjects. That is, there is only one subject that a simple nominal structure or a short nominal phrase fills the position of SUBJECT. In the case of more than one subject to the verb, dual or plural personal pronoun may be used. If the PREDICATE is not complicated, it is reduplicated that two clauses result. For example,

MG241

ဗြင်	ဒုႏ	ပွံတ်	မိုဝ်ႈ	ဒုႏ	ပွံတ်
brəŋ	du	pwət	muʔ	du	pwət
horse	flee	DONE AWAY	ox	flee	DONE AWAY
n	vi	adv-mann	n	vi	adv-mann
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		SUBJECT	PREDICATE	

The horses and the oxen ran away.

A coordination noun phrase[18] filling the position of SUBJECT is another option. In this case, the demonstrative ဒိန် /din/ may be put at the end of the noun phrase in SUBJECT. For example,

WSR2-49.13

အလင်ꩻ	ဟောႏဘ္လော၊	ပည်	လ္ဲ	ဂဲ	မိုဝ်ꩻ	ရောတ်	ပွံတ်	တ	နာင်	ယာမ်ဒိန်
ʔaˑləŋ	hɔj.blɔˈ	paˑj	lɛ	gɛ	mʏh	rɔt	pwət	taˑ	naŋ	jam.din
embryo Buddha	white water-snail	and		cart	PL	YES-emp	reach	DONE	DIR	princess that time
NP		conn-ph	NP		prt-v	VP		RNP		n-ref
NP(COOR)										
NP										
SUBJECT					cs-emp	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER

Embryo Buddha White Water-snail and the carts really reached at the princess at that time.

WSR2-57.1-2

အူႏဒိန်	ဟောႏဘ္လော၊	ဂါရ	နာင်	အူႏ	ဘုရမာ	ဒိန်	ဟော	တခ္ꩻည်	ဂါရ	ဟွ္ည်ꩻ	ယွိုဝ်
ʔu.din	hɔj.blɔˈ	gar	naŋ	ʔu	bu.raˑma	din	hɔ	taˑkʰʏj	gar	hwaˑjˈ	jʏ
now	white water-snail	and	princess	one	couple	that	palace	pleasant	3D	ALREADY	find
n-temp	n	conn-ph	n	card-coeff	n	dem	n	adj	prn-per	aux-asp	vt
	NP(COOR)			QP		NP			VP		
	NP										
	SUBJECT					OBJECT		PREDICATE C.			

White Water-snail and the princess become a couple and have their lovely palace.

---

[18] See section 10.1.1.1. Coordination (COOR) Noun Phrase.

Sometimes, the constituent RECAP[19] is employed for the SUBJECT. For example,

WSR2-44.1	အလၢင် ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော၊ ဂါရ် နှာင် ဒီန်	ဂါရ်	ဘ္ိုည် လၢ်း ၜ္ၜည် ကောည် ဒေ ဆဲး ကုၢင်
	ʔaˑləŋ hɔj.blɔɣ gar naŋ din	gar	bɤj lʌh gwaˑj kɔj de sɛh kuˑŋ
	embryo white and princess that Buddha water-snail	3D	though go dwell alone SELF outside town to
	NP conn-n dem ph	prn-per	conn-cl VP RNP
	RECAP	SUBJECT	<link> PREDICATE CLAUSE MODIFIER

Embryo Buddha White Water-snail and the princess went to dwell by themselves outside town.

According to the semantic relationship between SUBJECT and PREDICATE, SUBJECT can be active or passive to PREDICATE that SUBJECT can be performing or being affected by the action realized in PREDICATE correspondingly. Here are two examples.

WS38.2	အော	ဒီ	ရ္ိရ်	ၜာင်	ၜာရ်
	ʔɔ	di	rʌr	ɟaŋ	ɟar
	1S	WILL	make	tower	high
	prn-per	aux-asp	vt	NP	
	active SUBJECT	PREDICATE			

I will make a tall tower

WS9.4	ရၣ္ၜည်	ဟ္ၜည်း	ရ္ိရ်	လလ
	raˑgwaˑj	hwaˑjɣ	rʌr	laˑ.laˑ
	dwelling place	FINISH	make	well
	n	aux-asp	vt	adv
	passive SUBJECT	PREDICATE		

The dwelling place has been well prepared.

In a ***passive-SUBJECT clause***, the verb in PREDICATE must be transitive[20] or passive[21] and the performer of the action is always unspecified, though it may be understood in context. In its structure, this kind of clause has the complement of the verb in its SUBJECT, but nothing in COMPLEMENT. This makes it look like an active-SUBJECT intransitive clause, only its PREDICATE CENTRAL is filled by a transitive verb or a passive verb but not an intransitive verb, and its SUBJECT is filled by nominal form for the one being affected by the action of the verb. Here is a summary of the structure of active-SUBJECT clause and passive- SUBJECT clause.

Table 7: Active/Passive-SUBJECT Clause Structures

Clause Constituent Position Clause Type	SUBJECT	PREDICATE	
		PREDICATE CENTRAL	COMPLEMENT
Active-SUBJECT Clause	noun (subject of verb; performing action)	transitive verb	noun (complement of verb; being affected by action)

---

[19] See section 5.8. RECAP.
[20] A transitive verb is a verb which takes an object.
[21] See the paragraph about passive verb in section 9.1.3. Verb (v) and the paragraphs about passive PREDICATE in section 5.2.2. Intransitive PREDICATE.

	noun (subject of verb; performing action)	intransitive verb	Ø
Passive-SUBJECT Clause	noun (complement of verb; being affected by action)	transitive verb	Ø
	noun (subject of verb; being affected by action)	passive verb	Ø

5.2. PREDICATE

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE			CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL		COMPLEMENT	
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

PREDICATE is the counterpart of SUBJECT in a clause. It states or describes about SUBJECT, concerning the details about what it is, what it does, how it is, etc. In GP (SL), PREDICATE is composed of PREDICATE CENTRAL and COMPLEMENT. PREDICATE CENTRAL always exists, while COMPLEMENT is optional. PREDICATE CENTRAL holds such an significant position that it determines the type of PREDICATE and that the classification of SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause. There are four types of PREDICATE, that is, transitive, intransitive, attributive, and linking, realizing semantic functions such as activity, experience, cognition, reaction, expression, creation, process, ownership, attribution, identification, etc.

5.2.1. Transitive PREDICATE

Transitive PREDICATE has a transitive verb or verbal phrase in PREDICATE CENTRAL and can take a nominal form in COMPLEMENT.[22] It makes a transitive SP clause. It is widely used to convey a variety of messages, such as activity, sensory experience, reaction, creation, expression, etc. Here are some examples.

WS55.3

ဂဲ	တ္ုဝ်း	ြခိရ်
gɛ	tɤh	kʰrir
3P	take	gold
prn-per	vt	n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT

They took gold.

WS22.2

ယာဖည်	လ္ုပ်	အ္ုန်	အ္ုန်	တ	က္ုိအဲင်
ja.pʰaj	lʌp	ʔun	ʔʌn	ta·	klo.ʔɛŋ
ogress	put (into)	FIX	3S	DIR	glazed earthen pot
n	vt	adv-mann	prn-per	RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

The ogress put and kept it in a glazed earthen jar-pot.

---

[22] It is noteworthy that transitive PREDICATE does not always have its COMPLEMENT filled. Its distinctive feature from intransitive PREDICATE is that it CAN have its COMPLEMENT filled and intransitive PREDICATE CANNOT.

WSR10.3

(ယာနာင်ခွန်ဟော်ခမ်)	ရဲ့	ဒေ	ငှ်ုပ	ဂွ်	ပှ်ုန်	ညာ	ခွန်ဟော်ခမ်
(ja.naŋ.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm)	rɛʔ	de	ŋɤp	gɤ	pʌn	ɲa	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm
(queen)	wait	SELF	look	EMP-only	EmCl -what	do	king
(n)	vt	VP		prt-mood cs-mood	NP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER			COMPLEMENT		

The queen only watched what the king did.

WS22.3

ယာဖဉ်	ရံက်	ညှိုးညှိုး	အုန်
ja.pʰaj	rək	ɲ̥oh.ɲ̥oh	ʔʌn
ogress	love	exceedingly	3S
n	vt	adv-deg	prn-per
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT

The ogress loved it very much.

WS49.1

အလံင်	ဟော်ည်ဘ္လော	ရွံရ်	ဂါရ်	ကုံရ်ဟွုပ်	လွာ	ထာန်
ʔa·ləŋ	hɔj.blɔɣ	rʌr	gar	kʌr.hup	l̥a	tʰan
embryo Buddha	white water-snail	make	3D	hut	leaf	palm tree
NP		vt	prn-per	NP		
SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT		

The embryo Buddha, White Water-snail, made for themselves a palm tree leaf hut.

Ab3.7

အုန်	စီ	ဒါး	ငဲခဲ	တ	ဂဲ
ʔʌn	ci	dah	ŋɛ.kʰɛ	ta·	gɛ
3S	CHRON	say	Chinese language	DIR	3P
prn-per	conn-cl	vt	n	RNP	
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He then spoke Chinese to them.

GP (SL) has a special transitive PREDICATE, taking a SP clause in its COMPLEMENT. It limits several transitive verbs in PREDICATE CENTRAL, which are largely for giving or receiving expression and cognition. Here are some examples.

WS32.5

အုန်	ဒါး	အော	ကာ	ယ္ငိုဝ်	ထိ
ʔʌn	dah	ʔɔ	ka	jɤ	tʰi·
3S	say	1S	NEG (IND)	find	bean
prn-per	vt	prn-per	VP		n
		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT
		Cl			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			

He said, 'I don't have beans.'

WS21.5

ယာဖဉည်	နံပ်	ပွံတ်	အုၚ်ႜ	မ္ၚိဝ်း	ကွုံန်	ဟောခံမ်
ja.pʰaj	nəp	pwət	ʔʌn	mɤh	kwən	hɔ.kʰəm
ogress	know	DONE AWAY	3S	be	son, daughter	king
			prn-per	vlink	NP	
n	vt	adv-mann	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	
			Cl			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT			

The ogress knew right away that it was a king's child.

WSR2-29.2

တီပ်	ကွုံန်	ဒေ	ဟောည်ဘ္လော	ဟွည်း	ကာ	ယ္ၚိဝ်
tip	kwən	de	hɔj.blɔɤ	hwaˑjɤ	ka	jɤ
seek	son	SELF	white water-snail	FINISH, ALREADY	NEG (IND)	find
vt	APP			VP		
	SUBJECT			PREDICATE		
	Cl					
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT					

(She) found that her son, White Water-snail, had already gone.

WS42.1

အလံင်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော	ဆတိုၚ်	ဘီ	ြည်	နာၚ်	ဒီ	ဘေည်	ဆြွတ်	ဒေ
ʔaˑləŋ	hɔj.blɔɤ	saˑtɯŋ	bi	graˑj	naŋ	di	bej	saˑprwət	de
embryo Buddha	white water-snail	hear, listen	people	tell	princess	WILL	throw	turban	SELF
NP		vt	n	vt	n	VP	NP		
					SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		
			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	Cl				
			Cl		COMPLEMENT				
			COMPLEMENT						
SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT						

The embryo Buddha, White Water-snail, heard that people said that the princess would throw her turban.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling transitive PREDICATE.

Table 8: Basic Structure of Transitive PREDICATE Clause

SUBJECT	PREDICATE	
	PREDICATE CENTRAL	COMPLEMENT
n, prn, NP	vt, VP (non-SP)	n, prn, NP, Cl

5.2.2. Intransitive PREDICATE

Intransitive PREDICATE has an intransitive verb, including directive verb, or a verbal phrase in PREDICATE CENTRAL and cannot have anything in its COMPLEMENT. It makes an intransitive SP clause. It is used to express directive activity, reaction, etc. Here are some examples.

WSR18.3

မည်	ဟၣ်	တ	ကိုရ်ပ္ၚည်
maˑj	hʌʔ	taˑ	kɯr.pɤj
NEG(IMP)	move up	DIR	roof
neg	vdir	NRP	

Don't go upstair

WS5.1

နာ်ႛ	ပူႛရ်	ဆၢီ	ဂါရ်	ဇေင်	တ	ဟော
nʌʔ	pur	sa·ŋi	gar	veŋ	ta·	hɔ
be full	seven	UNIT(time,day)	3D	move back (go/come)	DIR	palace
EmCl-temp			prn-per	vdir	RNP	
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

After seven days, they went back to the palace.

WS12.2

မီ	မည်ႛ	ယၢမ်
mi	ma·j	jam
2S	NEG(IMP)	weep
prn-per	neg	vi
	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.
	VP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	

Don't weep!

WS44.8

�’ဘီ	ယူႛမ်	ဒိႛည်ꓹဒိႛည်ꓹ
bi	jum	dojˠ.dojˠ
people	laugh	all
n	vi	adv-scope
	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER
	VP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	

The people all laughed.

Passive PREDICATE is a special kind of intransitive PREDICATE in GP (SL). It has passive verb[23] filling in the PREDICATE CENTRAL and nothing in COMPLEMENT that it also makes an intransitive SP clause structure. However, the 'subject' to the passive verb, that is the item fills in the position of SUBJECT, is the one being affected by the action of the verb. For example,

WSR2-40.3

အော	ကဆေ	’ဘီ	တၢင်	ပါရ်
ʔɔ	ka·se	bi	taŋ	par
1S	be ashamed	people	on account of	2D
prn-per	vi-pass	n	RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

I am ashamed before people because of you.

In this example, it is that the subject feels shame and not that the subject shames someone.

Passive PREDICATE can be filled with Supplement-Main (SM) verbal phrase[24] formed by passive verb in order to show passiveness of a transitive action. Compare these two self-explanatory examples.

အော	လုႛရ်ႛ		အုႛန်
ʔɔ	lʌr̥		ʔʌn
1S	hit		3S
prn-per	vt		prn-per
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT

I hit him

---

[23] See the paragraph about passive verb in section 9.1.3. Verb (v).
[24] See section 10.2.4. Supplement-Main (SM) Verbal Phrase.

အုဲ့န်	ဘုဲ့ပ်	လုဲ့ရ့	
ʔʌn	bʌp	lʌr̥	
3S	INVOLUNTARY-be forced to	hit	
prn-per	vi-pass	vt	
	Supplement	Main	
	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	
	VP(SM)		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		

LT: He was forced to receive hitting
FT: He was hit

The Main part of the SM verbal phrase filling in passive PREDICATE, theoretically, should be transitive. However, the passive verb ဘုဲ့ပ် /bʌp/ 'must, be forced to' can take another passive verb, but which should be in form of reflexive Subject-Predicate (SP) verbal phrase.[25] Then, what to fill the PREDICATE in the clause is not a SM verbal phrase with ဘုဲ့ပ် /bʌp/ as Supplement, but a Head-Modifier (HM) verbal phrase[26] with ဘုဲ့ပ် /bʌp/ as Head. That is, there should be no two passive verbs in a row. Here is an example, followed by a false make-up one for comparison.

WSR2-8.15	(အယ်)	ဘုဲ့ပ်	အယ်	ကဆေ
	(ʔɛ)	bʌp	ʔɛ	kaˑse
	1P (inclusive)	INVOLUNTARY	1P (inclusive)	be ashamed
	prn-per	vi-pass	prn-per	vi-pass
			VP (SP)	
		Head	Modifier	
		PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	
		VP (HM)		
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		
	I'm ashamed.			

	(အယ်)	ဘုဲ့ပ်	ကဆေ	
	ʔɛ	bʌp	kaˑse	✕
	1P (inclusive)	INVOLUNTARY	be ashamed	
	prn-per	vi-pass	vi-pass	
		Supplement	Main	
		PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	
		VP(SM)		
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		
	I'm ashamed.			

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling intransitive PREDICATE.

Table 9: Basic Structure of Intransitive PREDICATE Clause

SUBJECT	PREDICATE	
	PREDICATE CENTRAL	COMPLEMENT
n, prn, NP	vi, vi-pass, vdir, VP (non-SP)	Ø

5.2.3. Attributive PREDICATE
Attributive PREDICATE has an adjective in PREDICATE CENTRAL and nothing in COMPLEMENT. It is mainly used to state attribution, emotion, evaluation, etc. Here are some examples.

---

[25] See section 10.2.1. Subject-Predicate (SP) Verbal Phrase.
[26] See section 10.2.3. Head-Modifier (HM) Verbal Phrase.

WS37.2

ကွ္နန်	ဟော်ခမ်	ကုင်	နာန်	ကုင်	တည်	ဂဲ	ရဝ်
kwən	hɔ.kʰəm	ku·ŋ	nan	ku·ŋ	ta·j	gɛ	ra·w
son	king	country	that	country	that	3P	angry
NP							adj
SUBJECT							PREDICATE C.

Princes from other countries may be angry.

WS23.10

အိုန်	ဟွ္ည,	ဒါင်
ʔʌn	hwa·jˋ	daŋ
3S	FINISH	big, great
prn-per	aux-asp	adj
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.

He grew up.

WS45.2

ငါ္ည	အိုန်	ခိုရိုႏရိုႏ
ŋaj	ʔʌn	kʰo.roh.roh
face	3S	very red
NP		adj
SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.

His face was very red.

WSR2-18.2

အိုန်	ကု္ရုယံရိုႏ	ဂံတ်	လူ္တ္လာည်
ʔʌn	kʌr.jəɹ	gət	lut.laj
3S	beautiful	CAUSE-DED-so.much.that	exceedingly, most
prn-per	adj	adv-mann	adv-deg
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	POST-C. MODIFIER

It is so beautiful that…

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling attributive PREDICATE.

Table 10: Basic Structure of Attributive PREDICATE Clause

SUBJECT	PREDICATE	
	PREDICATE CENTRAL	COMPLEMENT
n, prn, NP	adj, AP	Ø

5.2.4. Linking PREDICATE

Linking PREDICATE has linking verb မို္ဝ်ႏ /mɤh/ 'be' or ပဲန် /pɛn/ 'become' in PREDICATE CENTRAL and a nominal form or a clause in COMPLEMENT, expressing identification or process. Here are some examples.

WS59.2

အော	မို္ဝ်ႏ	ည္ိုႏ	ရလေႏ	မီ
ʔɔ	mɤh	ɲoh	ra·leh	mi
1S	be	really, truly	husband	2S
prn-per	vlink	adv-mood	NP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	

I'm really your husband.

WS52.11	အ္ဒိန်အိုၟ်	ယာ�ရ်	ဒီ	ပဲၟ်	ဆထေ	ယၟ်ၟ်
	ʔu.din.ʔɯ	jar	di	pɛn	sa·tʰe	jʌʔ
	now	1D (exclusive)	WILL	become	rich man	SURE
	n-temp	prn-per	aux-asp	vlink	n	cs-mood
	CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood

Now, surely we will become rich man.

WSR2-20.9	(အီ)	တောင်လှ့လှ့	နိုၟ်	ကိုၟ်	မ္ၟိဝ်ၟ်	အ္န်	ဒဲ့	လ	ဒဲ့	ကျ
	(ʔi)	teŋ.luh.luh	nɤ	kʌn	mɤh	ʔʌn	dɛh	la·	dɛh	kja·
	(person)	shining yellow	above	COND	be	Emb-SUBJ	give	goodness	give	goodness
	NP			conn-cl	vlink	EmCl				
	SUBJECT			<link>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT				

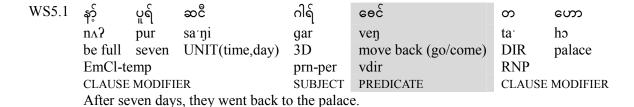If the very yellow one up there is someone who brings goodness, …

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling linking PREDICATE.

Table 11: Basic Structure of Linking PREDICATE Clause

SUBJECT	PREDICATE	
	PREDICATE CENTRAL	COMPLEMENT
n, prn, NP	vlink	n, NP, EmCl

5.3. COMPLEMENT

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

COMPLEMENT is a related clause constituent to transitive verb and linking verb in PREDICATE CENTRAL. It locates after PREDICATE CENTRAL, or POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER if any. The grammatical structure in COMPLEMENT is similar to that in SUBJECT, that is filled by nominal forms such as noun, pronoun, and noun phrase, but expresses the patient, stimulus, phenomenon, affect, created, communique, owned, attribute, identifier, change, etc. COMPLEMENT takes clause in some cases, while SUBJECT does not. COMPLEMENT can be filled by a more complex nominal structure, while subject usually has a relatively simple structure. However, apposition occurs in SUBJECT and is not common in COMPLEMENT. See section 3.2.1 Transitive PREDICATE and 3.2.4 Linking PREDICATE for examples.

Usually, GP (SL) clause only takes one COMPLEMENT. However, sometimes, there seemingly appear two. In fact, it is fronting of clasue contiutent[27] and not two COMPLEMENTs occurring in a clause. Consider these two examples. The first example, which seems having two COMPLEMENTs, actually results from fronting of clause modifier in the second example, which is in normal order.

အ္န်	တဲမ်	မိ	လိ	အ္ဍု	ဖ္ဝုန်
ʔʌn	tɛm	mi	li·	ʔu	pʰɯn
3S	write	2S	letter	one	UNIT(letter)
prn-per	vt	prn-per	NP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT		

He wrtoe you a letter.

---

[27] See also chapter 13. Fronting Clause constituent.

အုၣ်	တဲမ်	လိ	အ့	ဖိုၣ်	တ	မိ
ʔʌn	tɛm	li·	ʔu	pʰɯɯn	da·	mi
3S	write	letter	one	UNIT(letter)	DIR	2S
prn-per	vt	NP			RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He wrote a letter to you.

5.4. *ATTRIBUTIVE*

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
			PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER		
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE			ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

ATTRIBUTIVE is modifier for noun and functions in noun phrase. As noun phrase is widely employed in GP (SL), ATTRIBUTIVE appears in various clause constituents such as SUBJECT, COMPLEMENT, and RECAP to modify their CENTRALs. It can be filled by one or more than one noun, pronoun, noun phrase, adjective, adjective phrase, indefinite quantifier, quantifier phrase, referential noun phrase, demonstrative, embedded clause, etc., following the head noun which it modifies in the noun phrase. ATTRIBUTIVE usually gives information about attribution, ownership, kinship, quantity, identification, etc. of the item that the noun represents. Here are some examples.

WS16.5

နာင်	လဂါ	တိုၣ်း	ဒေ	ဒိုၣ်	ဇေင်	ဒဲ့း	တ	ဟောခံမ်	လဂါ
naŋ	la·ga	tɤh	de	dɤj	veŋ	dɛh	ta·	hɔ.kʰəm	la·ga
princess	dragon	take	SELF	bring, take	back	give	DIR	king	dragon
n	n	VP							
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE								
NP									
SUBJECT		PREDICATE							

The dragon princess took it back and went to give it to the dragon king.

WS50.6

နာင်	တိုၣ်း	မိင်ဂိုည်	အုၣ်	အ့	ဝ့ၣ်
naŋ	tɤh	məŋ.goj	ʔʌn	ʔu	gwəŋ
princess	take	ring	3S	one	UNIT(ring)
n	vt	n	prn-per	QP	
		CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	
		NP			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			

The princess took one of her rings.

WS28.3

အော	လာ်း	မေန်	အုယေန်	မာ	အော
ʔɔ	lʌh	men	ʔu.jen	ma	ʔɔ
1S	move to (go)	look after, take care	garden	mother	1S
prn-per	VP		n	NP	
			CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
			NP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

I'm going to look my mother's garden.

WS1.3

ဂါရ်	ဒါ	ရှိုန်ဒါ	ဘ္လော,
gar	da	rʌn.da	blɔɣ
3D	dress	clothes	white
prn-per	vt	n	adj
		CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	

They wore white clothes

WS3.7

ခုန်ဖိ	လေ့	ဒဲ့	အော	ဟောမ်	မမောန်ခြိရ်	ငါမ်	ညိုးညို့
kʰun.pʰi	leh	dɛh	ʔɔ	hɔm	ma·mɔn.kʰrir	ŋam	ɲoh.ɲoh
spirit	move down	give	1S	eat(rice)	mango (long)	sweet	exceedingly
n	vdir	vt	prn-per	vt	n	AP	
	VP		VP(SP)		CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		POST-C. MODIFIER		COMPLEMENT		

The spirit came down to give very sweet mangos for me to eat.

WS9.6

ကွံန်	အာည်	အိုဝ်	ဒဲ့	ဘီ	လောင	ပဲတ်	အုန်	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
kwən	ʔaj	ʔɯ	dɛh	bi	lɔŋ	pɛt	ʔʌn	ɟɔm	ʔom
son, daughter	1D (incl)	this	IMPER	people	float	DONE AWAY	3S	along	water
n	prn-per	dem	vt	n	VP		prn-per	RNP	
CENTRAL NP	ATTR.	ATTR.	PREDICATE C.	COMPLE.					
			Cl.1						
RECAP				SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLE.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	
				Cl.2					

Let the people float our child down the stream.

WS54.7

ရှုရ်	လ္ဲ	အော	ဒိုည်,ဒိုည်,
ruɾ̥	lɛ	ʔɔ	dojɣ.dojɣ
pull	cart	1S	all
vt	n	prn-per	adj-quan
	CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		

Pulled all my carts

Dict71

မှာ့	ဒါ	အုန်	ဂိုည်ဂိုည်
m̥ʌʔ	da	ʔʌn	goj.goj
hat	wear	3S	not fit
n.	vt	prn-per	adj
OBJECT	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
	EmCl		
CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE		
SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.

The hat he wore wasn't fit

WL1350

အိမ်	တ	လော,
ʔom	ta·	lɔɣ
water	DIR	valley
n	n-ref	n
	RNP	
CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE	
Spring		

WSR2-26.9

အော	ဒီ	ရာတ်	ဘုံဝ်	အော	လၢ်း	လွံင်	တ	အူယေန်	ဒါ့	မာ	အော	ပီ
ʔɔ	di	rat	bɤ	ʔɔ	lʌh	lwəŋ	ta·	ʔu.jen	dah	ma	ʔɔ	pi
1S	WILL	steal	only	1S	go to	wander	DIR	garden	say	mother	1S	that
prn-per	aux-asp	vt	adv-mood	prn-per	vdir	vt	n-ref	n	EmCl			dem
								CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE			ATTR.
							RNP					
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.							CLAUSE MODIFIER				

I'll secretly wander at the garden which my mother mentioned.

Obviously, there can exist more than one ATTRIBUTIVE in a noun phrase. In this case, the ATTRIBUTIVEs should be in a particular order. Here is a summary followed by some examples. The dotted line in the table means no strict order between the two ATTRIBUTIVEs.

Table 12: Order of ATTRIBUTIVEs

SUBJECT, COMPLEMENT, CLAUSE MODIFIER, RECAP							
	NP						
ARRTIBUTIVE	CENTRAL	ARRTIBUTIVE					
NP	n, prn-per, NP	prn-per, n, NP	adj, AP, n, NP, RNP, EmCl	prn-per, n, NP	prt-n	adj-quan, QP	dem
Entirety	Item	Kinship	Attribution	Ownership	Quantity		Identification

WSR2-52.8

ဆဒေါ	ဟည်	အုံန်
sa·dɔ	pʰaj	ʔʌn
jacket	ogre	3S
n	n	prn-per
Item	Attribution	Ownership
his ogre jacket		

WSR2-34.3

ကွံန်နာင်	ကုံရံယံရ်း	အုံန်	ဒီန်
kwən.naŋ	kʌr.jəɽ	ʔʌn	din
princess	beautiful	3S	that
n	adj	prn-per	dem
Item	Attribution	Kinship	Identification
his beautiful princess			

WSR2- 51.11

ရလေး	အော	ညောညော	ဟောည်ဘ္လော့	ပီ
ra·leh	ʔɔ	ɲɔ.ɲɔ	hɔj.blɔɣ	pi
husband	1S	very ugly	white water-snail	that
n	prn-per	adj	n	dem
Item	Kinship	Attribution	Item	Identification
NP			NP	

my very ugly husband, the White Water-snail

WSR44.3

ရလေး	လ	အူ	ကူ
ra·leh	la·	ʔu	ku
husband	be good	one	UNIT(person)
n	adj	QP	
Item	Attribution	Quantity	

a good husband

MG72

စါစည်	အုန်	ဂဲ	ပုံရ်ဒီ
va.va·j	ʔʌn	gɛ	pʌn.di
relative	3S	PL	some
n	prn-per	prn-n	adj-quan
Item	Kinship	Quantity	Quantity

some of his relatives

MG197

ဂါရ်	အာရ်	ကူ	အုန်	ခြ်မ်
gar	ʔar	ku	ʔʌn	kʰrʌm
3D	two	UNIT(person)	3S	rich
prn-per	QP		prn-per	vi
NP				
Entirety			Item	
NP				
SUBJECT			PREDICATE	

Out of two of them, he is rich.

It is noteworthy that when quantity, kinship or ownership, and attribute are to express at the same time, a clause but not a noun phrase should be formed. Comparing these two examples. The first one is a valid expression and the second one is unnatural.

ကွ်န်	အော	ဂါရ်	အာရ်	ကူ	ပီ	ပည်	ကုံရ်ယံရ်း	ပည်	လ
kwən	ʔɔ	gar	ʔar	ku	pi	pa·j	kʌr.jər̥	pa·j	la·
son, daughter	1S	DUAL	two	UNIT(person)	that	COOR	beautiful	COOR	clever
n	prn-per	prt-n	QP		dem	conn	adj	conn	adj
Item	Kinship	Quantity	Quantity		Identification	Attribution			
NP						AP			
SUBJECT						PREDICATE			
Cl									

My two children are both beautiful and clever.

ကွ်န်	အော	ပည်	ကုံရ်ယံရ်း	ပည်	လ	ဂါရ်	အာရ်	ကူ
kwən	ʔɔ	pa·j	kʌr.jər̥	pa·j	la·	gar	ʔar	ku
son, daughter	1S	COOR	beautiful	COOR	clever	DUAL	two	UNIT(person)
N	prn-per	AP				prn-per	QP	
Item	Kinship	Attribution				Quantity	Quantity	
NP								

my two beautiful and clever children

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling ATTRIBUTIVE.

Table 13: Basic Structure of Noun Phrase with ATTRIBUTIVE

SUBJECT, COMPLEMENT, CLAUSE MODIFIER, RECAP		
NP		
ARRTIBUTIVE	CENTRAL	ARRTIBUTIVE
NP	n, prn-emb, NP	n, prn-per, NP, adj, AP, RNP, prt-n, adj-quan, QP, dem, EmCl

5.5. PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	**PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER**	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER is modifier for verb in PREDICATE CENTRAL. It precedes the verb which it modifies and is filled by auxiliary verb, quantifier phrase, negator to show aspect, frequency, capability, intention, negation, etc. of the action. Here are some examples.

WS44.5 နာင်   ဟွည်,   ဒါ့;   ခို့ည်   ဒီန်
        naŋ   hwa·jˠ   dah   kʰˠj   din
        princess   FINISH   say   like   that
        n   aux-asp   vt   RNP
        SUBJECT   PRE-C. MODIFIER PREDICATE C.   CLAUSE MODIFIER
        The princess had said that.

GF7.4   အိုမ်   ကာခြိရ် ဒေ   အူ   ဆင်ိ   အူ   လိုဝ်;
        ʔom   ka.kʰrir de   ʔu   sa·ŋi   ʔu   lˠh
        water   goldfish SELF   one UNIT(time,day) one UNIT(freq.)
        NP   QP-n
        SUBJECT   PRE-C. MODIFIER
        His goldfish water was changed everyday

        ကို့ရ်လှာည်   အိုမ်   ကို့န်မဲ   ငါ   ဆေဆေ
        kʌr.l̥aj   ʔom   kʌn.mɛ   ŋa   se.se
        change   water   new (thing) clear always
        vt   NP   adv-cl
        PREDICATE C. COMPLEMENT   CLAUSE MODIFIER
        to new clean water.

WSR2-9.4 အော   ဒီ   ကာ   အူန်   စိ   ကွံန်ဟောည် ဒီန် တ   ဟော
          ʔɔ   di   ka   ʔun   ci·   kwən.hɔj   din ta· hɔ
          1S   WILL   NEG   keep, fix, save POLITE little water that DIR palace
                        (IND)   snail
          prn-per aux-asp neg   vt   prt-mood NP   RNP
          SUBJECT PRE-C. PRE-C. PREDICATE C. cs-mood COMPLEMENT CLAUSE
                  MODIFIER MODIFIER   MODIFIER
          I will not keep the little water-snail in palace

WS56.10 အော   ကာ   ယာႉ,   ဟၞ်
         ʔɔ   ka   jaɤ   hʌʔ
         1S   NEG (IND)   DARE   move up
         prn-per neg   aux-cap   vdir
         SUBJECT PRE-C. MODIFIER PRE-C. MODIFIER PREDICATE C.

I did not dare to go.

WSR2-18.1 အော   ကာ   ဆုိန်[28]   ဗိရ်   တုိၚ်   စိ   အုၚ်
           ʔɔ   ka   sʌn   vir   ton   ciˑ   ʔʌn
           1S   NEG (IND)   DESIRE   return   escort,   POLITE   3S
                                           (from)   send
           prn-per neg   aux-intent VP   prt-mood prn-per
           SUBJECT PRE-C.   PRE-C.   PREDICATE C.   cs-mood COMPLEMENT
                   MODIFIER   MODIFIER

I don't want to send him back.

There can exist more than one PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER in PREDICATE of a clause. In this case, the PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIERs should be in a particular odrer.[29] Here is a summary.

Table 14: Order of PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIERS

PREDICATE			
VP			
PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER			PREDICATE CENTRAL
aux-asp, QP-n	neg	aux-intent, aux-cap, vi-pass, ဘ္ုန် /bɤn/, ဘဲ /bɛ/	vt, vi, vdir, VP(non-SP)
Aspect	Negation	Intent, Capability	Activity, Experience, Cognition, etc.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

Table 15: Basic Structure in PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER

PREDICATE	
PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	PREDICATE CENTRAL
aux, QP-n, neg	vt, vi, vdir, adj, VP(non-SP)

---

[28] This word may be ဇၚ်နၚ် /ɟəŋ.nəŋ/ dialect, which should be ဆိန် /sin/ in standard GP (SL).

[29] Because of the limitation of this order, there is no different between, for example, 'not want to do something' and 'want not to do something' that this expression is invalid in GP (SL).

*WSR2-18.1 အော   ဆုိန်   ကာ   ဗိရ်   တုိၚ်   စိ   အုၚ်
            ʔɔ   sʌn   ka   vir   ton   ciˑ   ʔʌn
            1S   DESIRE   NEG (IND)   return (from) send   POLITE   3S
            prn-per aux-intent neg   VP   prt-mood prn-per
            SUBJECT PRE-C.   PRE-C.   PREDICATE C.   <cs-mood> COMPLEMENT
                    MODIFIER   MODIFIER

I want not to send him back.

5.6. POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE			CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL		COMPLEMENT	
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	**POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER**	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER is also modifier for verb in PREDICATE CENTRAL but follows it. It is filled by directive verb, adverb, SP verbal phrase, reflexive personal pronoun, etc., showing the spatial direction, degree, manner, scope, mood, purpose, etc. of an action. Here are some examples.

WSR2-35.8

အုံၣ်	ဘေည်	လေး	ဆပွံၢ်တ်	ဒေ	တ	ဘီ
ʔʌn	bej	leh	saˑpwət	de	taˑ	bi
3S	throw	move down	(head) turban	SELF	DIR	people
prn-per	vt	vdir	NP		RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT		CL. MODIFIER	

She threw her turban to the people.

WS52.2

လၢ်း	ရော်တ်	တ	လော,
lʌh	rɔt	taˑ	lɔɣ
move to (go)	ACHIEVED	DIR	valley
vdir	adv-mood	RNP	
PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

(They) reached the valley.

WS44.10

အၟ်ရၣ်ၠၟ်ရၣ်	ညိုးညိုး
ʔuṛ.ŋur	ŋoh.ŋoh
smell good, fragrant	exceedingly
adj	adv-deg
PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER

(You) smell so good!

WS14.2

ဘီ	လောင်	ပွံၢ်တ်	အုံၣ်	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
bi	lɔŋ	pwət	ʔʌn	ɟɔm	ʔom
people	float	DONE AWAY	3S	along with	water
n	vt	adv-mann	prn-per	RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

The people floated him down the stream.

WS23.3

အုံၣ်	ဒၢ်	လောတ်	ဒေ	ရဘၣ်	ယာဖည်
ʔʌn	dʌʔ	lɔt	de	raˑbən	ja.pʰaj
3S	REMAIN	transform	SELF	behind	ogress
prn-per	aux-mann	vi	prn-refl	RNP	
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He kept transforming himself in the ogress' absence.

WS2.2

ခုၣ်ဖိ	လေး	ဒဲး	အုံၣ်	ဟောမ်	ပ္လေဘြို	ဆီၣ်
kʰun.pʰi	leh	dɛh	ʔʌn	hɔm	ple.bri	sin
spirit	move down	give	3S	eat	mango(round)	ripe, cooked
n	VP(non-SP)		prn-per	vt	NP	
			VP(SP)			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		POST-C. MODIFIER		COMPLEMENT	

The spirit came down to gave ripe mangos for her to eat.

Occasionally, more than one POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER occur in a clause. There may be a particular order of the POST-CENTRAL MODIFIERs. Compare these two examples. The first one is consdiered a better writing than the second one.[30]

အုၚ်န်	ဟွည်,	ချုၚ်မ်	ဒိုၚ်ည်,	ပဲတ်	ြ္ခ္ျမ်	ဒေ
?ʌn	hwa·jɣ	cʰum	dojɣ	pɛt	kʰrʌm	de
3S	FINISH,ALREADY	lose	completely	DONE AWAY	fortune	SELF
prn-per	aux-asp	vt	adv-scop	adv-mann	NP	
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	

He lost all his fortune away.

အုၚ်န်	ဟွည်,	ချုၚ်မ်	ပဲတ်	ဒိုၚ်ည်,	ြ္ခ္ျမ်	ဒေ
?ʌn	hwa·jɣ	cʰum	pɛt	dojɣ	kʰrʌm	de
3S	FINISH,ALREADY	lose	DONE AWAY	completely	fortune	SELF
prn-per	aux-asp	vt	adv-mann	adv-scop	NP	
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	

He lost away all his fortune.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

Table 16: Basic Structure in POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER

PREDICATE	
PREDICATE CENTRAL	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER
vt, vi, vdir, adj, VP(non-SP)	vdir, adv, VP(SP), prn-refl

5.7. CLAUSE MODIFIER

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

CLAUSE MODIFIER is a special clause constituent, locating at the beginning or the end of a clause. Usually, it is filled by temporal embedded clause, referential noun phrase,[31] noun phrase, quantifier phrase, noun, pronoun, temporal or spatial noun, adverb, etc. to provide a various kind of information such as temporal duration, temporal location, spatial location, audience, recipient, beneficiary,[32]

---

[30] The second example can be rewritten in this way , which is a much better writing.

အုၚ်န်	ဟွည်,	ချုၚ်မ်	ပဲတ်	ြ္ခ္ျမ်	ဒေ	ဒိုၚ်ည်,ဒိုၚ်ည်,
?ʌn	hwa·jɣ□	cʰum	pɛt	kʰrʌm	de	dojɣdojɣ
3S	FINISH,ALREADY	lose	DONE AWAY	fortune	SELF	all
prn-per	aux-asp	vt	adv-mann	NP		adv-cl
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT		CLAUSE MODIFIER

He lost away all his fortune.

[31] See section 10.1.2. Referential Noun Phrase.
[32] For a special order of a clause having CLAUSE MODIFIER realizing recipient and beneficiary, see chapter 13. Fronting Clause Constituent.

accompany, source, target, manner, reason, degree, scope, domain, attribute, evaluation, etc. of the event. There can exist more than one CLAUSE MODIFIER in a clause but only with different grammatical structure. That is, there is no two referential noun phrases, for example, filling two CLAUSE MODIFIERs in a row. Here are some examples.

WS5.1

နာ့်	ပူရဲ့	ဆငီ		ဂါရဲ့	ဗေင်		တ	ဟော
nʌʔ	pur	saˑŋi		gar	veŋ		taˑ	hɔ
be full	seven	UNIT(time,day)		3D	move back (go/come)		DIR	palace
vi	QP			prn-per	vdir		n-ref	n
EmCl-temp							RNP	
CLAUSE MODIFIER				SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

After seven days, they went back to the palace. [temporal location; spatial location]

WSR2-2.2-3

ဂါရဲ့	ပျူ	ဒေ	ရမာ	ဟွည်,	ဘိုန်	ပူရဲ့	ဆနံမ်	ယာ့်
gar	pjuˑ	de	raˑma	hwaˑjˀ	bɤn	pur	saˑnʌm	jʌʔ
3D	make	SELF	family	FINISH,ALREADY	get	seven	year	ALREADY
prn-per	VP		n	EmCl-temp				prt-mood
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER				cs-mood

They have married for seven years already,

WSR2-2.5

အာည်	ဆော့တဲ	မိင်	ပူရဲ့	ဆငီ
ʔaj	sɔʔ.tɛ	məŋ	pur	saˑŋi
1D (inclusive)	observe religious precepts	till about	seven	UNIT(time,day)
prn-per	vi	n-ref	QP	
		RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

We are to observe religious precepts for seven days. [temporal duration]

Pock37.7

ဒံင်	ပူရဲ့	ဆငီ	မီ	ကုံန်	ကာ	ဘိုန် ဒေ	ဒို့ည်	ကြုင် ကိုရဲနံမ်	ဒိန်
dəŋ	pur	saˑŋi	mi	kʌn	ka	bɤn de	dɤj	kruˑŋ kuur.nem	din
during	seven	UNIT(time,day)	2S	COND	NEG (IND)	get SELF	bring, take	drum god	that
n-ref	QP		prn-per	conn-cl	VP			NP	
RNP									
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT <link>		PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT	

In seven days, if you can't bring the spirit's drum,… [temporal duration]

WS54.8

ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ဒဲ့;	ခ္ရီရဲ့	တ	အုံန်
hɔj.blɔˀ	dɛh	kʰrir	taˑ	ʔʌn
white water-snail	give	gold	DIR	3S
n	vt	n	n-ref	prn-per
			RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

White Water-snail gave gold to him. [recipient][33]

---

[33] It is noteworthy that recipient is always realized by referential noun phrase plus the verb ဒဲ့; /dɛh/, which literally means 'give,' while beneficiary by referential noun phrase with any verb. Compare these two examples.

Ab3.7

အ္ုိန်	စ္ိ	ဒါ့;	ငဲခဲ	တ	ဂဲ
ʔʌn	ci	dah	ŋɛ.kʰɛ	ta·	gɛ
3S	CHRON	say	Chinese language	DIR	3P
prn-per	conn-cl	vt	n	n-ref	prn-per
				RNP	
SUBJECT	\<link\>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He then spoke Chinese to them. [audience]

WS51.7

မ္ုဝ်;	ချော,	မ္ိ	တ	အော
mɤh	cʰɔˠ	mi	ta·	ʔɔ
YES-emp	lie	2S	DIR	1S
prt-v	vi	prn-per	n-ref	prn-per
			RNP	
cs-emphasis	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

You lie to me! [target]

WS23.1

ဆင္ီ	ဒ္ိန်	ယာဖဥ်	က	ွဥ်
sa·ŋi	din	ja.pʰaj	ka	gwa·j
day	that	ogress	NEG (IND)	be present
n	dem	n	neg	vi
NP				
CLAUSE MODIFIER		SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.

That day, the ogress was not there. [temporal location]

WS26.1

အ္ု	ဆင္ီ	လ္ုဟ်;	တ	န္ုရ်;	အ္ုိန်
ʔu	sa·ŋi	ḷuh	ta·	nwər	ʔʌn
one	UNIT(time,day)	think of	DIR	heart, mind	3S
num.card	meas-ind	vt	n-ref	NP	
QP			RNP		
CLAUSE MODIFIER		PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

One day, (he) thought. [temporal location; spatial location?]

ဇ္ုိင်	ြ္ု	တ	မ္ိ
ɟɯŋ	gru	ta·	mi
sew	clothes	DIR	2S
vt	n	n-ref	prn-per

Sew clothes for you [beneficiary]

ဇ္ုိင်	ြ္ု	ဒဲ;	တ	မ္ိ
ɟɯŋ	gru	dɛh	ta·	mi
sew	clothes	give	DIR	2S
vt	n	vt	n-ref	prn-per

Sew clothes to you [recipient]

WS63.6

အူဒိန်အိုဝ်	�’	ြ	အုန်	ကုံရံယံရံး	ဒိုရ်	ဘ
ʔu.din.ʔɯ	bi	graˑj	ʔʌn	kʌr.jəɽ	dor	bi
now	people	tell	3S	beautiful	...than	people
n-temp	n	vt	prn-per	adj	n-ref	n
					RNP	

Cl

CLAUSE MODIFIER   SUBJECT   PREDICATE C.   COMPLEMENT

Now people said that he was more beautiful than others. [temporal location; degree]

WSR2-39.4

ငါည်	ဂိုပ်	ခိုရံးရံး	ပည်	ဝံင်
ŋaj	gɤp	kʰo.roh.roh	paˑj	pəŋ
face	PROG-even	very red	all	UNIT(round thing)
n	conn-cl	adj	QP	
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	
	part 2			

His face even all turned red. [scope]

WS3.5

အာည်	လာံး	ဆာ်ံတဲ	ဟာဒိန်
ʔaj	lʌh	sʌʔ.tɛ	ha.din
1D (inclusive)	move to (go)	fast	there
prn-per	VP		n-spat
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER

We went to fast there. [spatial location]

WS23.12

အုနံ	ဝ္ည်	တ	ဂါင်	ဆေဆေ
ʔʌn	gwaˑj	taˑ	gaŋ	se.se
3S	dwell, stay	DIR	house	always
prn-per	vi	n-ref	n	adv-cl
		RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He stayed home always. [spatial location; manner]

M44-26.7

ဂဲ	ယ္ိုဝ်	ညံး	စေတနာ	ပုနံ	ခြိုဝ်မျို
gɛ	jɤ	ŋoh	ce.taˑna	pun	kʰrɤ.mjo
3P	find	really, truly	kindness	for	race
prn-per	vt	adv	n	n-ref	n
				RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

They really had kindness for the race. [beneficiary]

WS17.3

အုနံ	ကာ	ဘ္ိုနံ	ဒေ	ဝ္ည်	ဇောမ်	အယ်
ʔʌn	ka	bɤn	de	gwaˑj	ɹɔm	ʔɛ
3S	NEG (IND)	be allowed	SELF	dwell, stay	along with	1P (inclusive)
prn-per	neg	vi	prn-refl	vi	n-ref	n
			VP		RNP	
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER		PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

It isn't allowed to live with us. [accompany]

Ab2.2

အလှိုဝ့်အလဲ	ယှိုဝ့်	တာခဲ	ဒိန်	အူ	ကူ
ʔa·lɤʔ.ʔa·lɛ	jɤ	ta.kʰɛ	din	ʔu	ku
unexpectedly	find	Chinese man	that	one	UNIT(person)
adv-cl	vt	NP			
CLAUSE MODIFIERS	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			

Unexpectedly, there was a Chinese old man. [manner]

WS45.5

အော	ကဆေ	ဘီ	တာင်	ပါရ်
ʔɔ	ka·se	bi	taŋ	par
1S	be ashamed	people	on account of	2D
prn-per	vi-pass	n	n-ref	prn-per
			RNP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIERS	CLAUSE MODIFIERS	

I am ashamed in front of others because of you. [source, reason]

WS24.4

မည်	ဟ�′	ထပ်	ရကှိုရ်ဗှိုည်
ma·j	hʌʔ	tʰap	ra·kʌr.vɤj
NEG(IMP)	move up	level	area above
neg	vdir	n	n-ref
		NP	
PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

Don't go upstairs. [spatial location]

MGp141*

ဒါ့	ငဲတအင်း	ကျူုည္ုးို့
dah	ŋɛ · ta·ʔaŋ	kju.ɲoh
speak	Ta'ang language	very difficult
vt	NP	adv-cl
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER

It is difficult to speak Ta'ang. [attribute]

WSR2-14.6-7

ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ရောတ်	ဟာမှာ့း
hɔj.blɔɤ	rɔt	ha.m̥ʌh
white water-snail	reach	any place
n	vi	prn-indef
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

Wherever White Water-snail arrives,… [spatial location]

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

Table 17: Basic Structure in CLASUE MODIFIER

CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER
EmCl-temp , RNP, NP, QP, n-temp, adv-cl,		Cl	EmCl-temp, RNP, NP, QP, ဘီ, n-spat, adv-cl

5.8. RECAP

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
			PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER		
ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE			ATTRIBUTIVE	ATTRIBUTIVE

RECAP is another special clause constituent preceding the clause central. It consists of two parts referring to the same item. The first part is a noun or noun phrase outside the clause central structure and the second part is a corresponding pronoun inside the clause central. When the item in RECAP refers to SUBJECT of a clause, the two parts of RECAP stand side by side. However, they are not apposition. When the item in RECAP refers to other constituents than SUBJECT of a clause, the first part of RECAP still precedes the clause central and separates from its counterpart. The form of RECAP is quite often used to introduce new character in a discourse or to put emphasis on a character, that is to make it the topic of the discourse or at least in the clause. Here are some examples.

WSR2-27.8	မာ	အော	အိုဝ်	အုံန	မုဲဝ့;	ယာဖာညဲ	ယၢ်
	ma	ʔɔ	ʔɯ	ʔʌn	mɤh	ja.pʰaj	jʌʔ
	mother	1S	this	3S	be	ogress	SURE
	n	prn-per	dem	prn-per	vlink	n	prt-mood
	NP						
	RECAP			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood

Surely my mother is an ogress.

WS 9.6	ကွုံန		အာည	အိုဝ်
	kwən		ʔaj	ʔɯ
	son, daughter		1D (inclusive)	this
①	n		prn-per	dem
②	NP			
③				
④	RECAP			
⑤				

This our child,

	ဒဲ;	ဘီ	လောင်	ပဲတ	အုံန	ဇောမ	အိုမ
	dɛh	bi	lɔŋ	pɛt	ʔʌn	ɹɔm	ʔɔm
	IMPER	people	float	AT ONCE	3S	along	water
①	vt	n	v	adv	prn-per	RNP	
②		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIERS	
③		Cl.2					
④	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT					
⑤	Cl.1						

ask the people to float him down the stream.

WSR2-38.5	ကူ	မ္ဂိဝ်း	ပါန်အောန်	ကျလ	ဒိန်						
	ku	mɤh	pan.ʔɔn	kja·.la·	din						
	person	be	spouse	good	that						
①	n	EmCl			dem						
②	NP										
③											
④											
⑤											
⑥	RECAP										
⑦											

A good husband,

	ဒဲး	ဆပွဲတ်	ဘောည်	အော	အိုဝ်	ဖ်း	စ့	တ	ရမောင်	အ္ဂန်	စိ
	dɛh	sa·pwət	bej	ʔɔ	ʔɯ	ɟʌh	fa·	ta·	ra·mɔŋ	ʔʌn	ci·
	SUBJNC	turban	throw	1S	this	fall	hang	DIR	neck	3S	POLITE
①	vt	NP			VP			n-ref	n	prn-per	
②									NP		prt-mood
③								RNP			
④		SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.			CLAUSE MODIFIERS			cs-mood
⑤		Cl.2									
⑥	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT									
⑦	Cl.1										

may the turban I throw fall on him.

5.9. PARENTHESIS

PARENTHESIS is an independent clause constituent having no structural relationship with other clause constituents. It neither takes a function of connection nor expresses mood. However, semantically, it supplements the expression with a sense of getting attention, suspicion, etc., or gives further information about a particular character or item just mentioned. PARENTHESIS can be filled by a short idiomatic phrase and slotted in a clause, preceding or following it, or a မ္ဂိဝ်း /mɤh/-clause following a clause.[34] Here are some examples.

WS54.4-5	ရၣ်မီ	ဒဲး	အော	တာင်	လ္ဲ	မီ	စိ
	rʌʔ.mi	dɛh	ʔɔ	taŋ	lɛ	mi	ci·
	excuse me	IMPER	1S	put, place	cart	2S	POLITE
	parenthesis	vt	prn-per	vt	NP		prt-mood
	PARENTHESIS	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT/SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		CS-MOOD

Excuse me! May I load your carts please?

WS52.10	ရလေး	အော	အိုဝ်	မ္ဂိဝ်း	အလင်	ကာနံပ်
	ra·leh	ʔɔ	ʔɯ	mɤh	ʔa·ləŋ	ka.nəp
	husband	1S	this	be	embryo Buddha	SUSPECION
	NP			vlink	n	parenthesis
	SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PARENTHESIS

(I suspect that) my husband is an embryo Buddha.

Est8.3	အ္ဂန်	တို္ဝ်း	ဒေ	ကုင်ဒေါမ်	ကွ်န်	ကူၤဗျ်ာတ်	ဒေ	၊	မ္ဂိဝ်း	ကွ်န်အိုင်န်	ၿဝ	အဲဆထၣ်ရ
	ʔʌn	tɤh	dɛ	kʌn.dɔm	kwən	kun.djət	dɛ		mɤh	kwən.ʔi.pʌn	ɟɯ	ʔɛ.sa·tʰər
	3S	take	SELF	adopt	child	uncle	SELF		be	daughter	call	Esther
	prn-per	VP			NP				Cl			
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT				PARENTHESIS			

He adopted his uncles's child, that is a girl called Esther

---

[34]   See also section 11.3. Clause-in-Clause Embedding.

5.10. ADDRESS

ADDRESS is another independent clause constituent. Semantically, it supplements a speech with an emphasis of the relationship between the speaker and the audience by calling the audience. ADDRESS is usually filled by noun or noun phrase and placed before or after a clause. It is quite often preceded or followed by INTERJECTION. The way in which the speaker addresses the audience depends on the culture. GP (SL) tends to address others by kinship or relationship terms rather than names. Here are some examples.

WS29.7-8

အ့ှိဝဲ့	ကွန်အီမဲ	အော	ဇေင်		တ	ဂါင်	အာည်
?ɤɹ	kwən.?i.mɛ	?ɔ	veŋ		ta·	gaŋ	?aj
Oh!	son	1S	move back (go/come)	DIR	house	1D (inclusive)
interj	n	prn-per	Cl				
	NP						
INTERJECTION	ADDRESS						

Oh, my son! Come home!

WS57.1-2

ဟွည်ႇလ	စ္ည်	အ့ှိဝဲ့
hwa·jɤ.la·	va·j	?ɤɹ
alright	elder brother	Oh!
parenthesis	n	interj
PARENTHESIS	ADDRESS	INTERJECTION

Alright, husband.

WS9.6

န္ဂာင်	အ့ှိဝဲ့	ကွန်	အာည်	အ့ှိဝ ဒဲ့	ဘီ	လောင်ပဲတ်	အ့ုန်ဇောမ်	အ့ုမ်
naŋ	?ɤɹ	kwən	?aj	?ɯ dɛh	bi	lɔŋ pɛt	?ʌn ɟɔm	?om
queen	Oh!	son, daughter	1D (inclusive)	this IMPER	people	float AT ONCE	3S along with	water
n	interj	Cl						
ADDRESS	INTERJECTION							

Oh, queen! Ask the people to float our child down the stream.

5.11. INTERJECTION

INTERJECTION is an independent clause constituent that, semantically, supplements a speech with an expression of emotion such as surprise, pleasant, pity, etc. It is usually filled by interjection (a word class) and put either in the beginning or at the end of a clause. Here are some examples.

Ab2.19

အားႇ	ဟွည်ႇလ	ဟွိည်ႇလ	ကုန်	ဒါးႇ	ခ့ိည်	ဒီန်
?aɹ	hwa·jɤ.la·	hwi·jɤ.la·	kʌn	dah	kʰɤj	din
Ah!	alright	alright	COND	say	like	that
INTERJECTION	PARENTHESIS	PARENTHESIS	Cl			

Ah, alright, alright as you say that.

WS59.13

အဲ့ႇ	ရလေးႇ	အော	ကုန်ယ်ံရ်ံးႇ	ည့ိုးႇည့ိုးႇ
?ɛɹ	ra·leh	?ɔ	kʌr.jəɹ	ɲoh.ɲoh
Eh!	husband	1S	beautiful	exceedingly
INTERJECTION	Cl			

Eh! My husband is very beautiful!

Ab2.9

တာ	ခဲ	ပိ	ဘုံပ်	ၚာၫ်ကြာင်	ဒီၫ်
ta	kʰɛ	pi	bʌp	ŋaj.braŋ	diʌ
old man	Chinese	that	happen (illness)	trachoma	PITY
Cl					INTERJECTION

Oh, the Chinese old man had trachoma.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms filling main constituents, additional constituents, and special constituents regarding their position and semantic functions which these constituents can realize in GP (SL). Mian constituents are bold and in shaded boxes; additional constituents are in thick-frame boxes; special constituents are in double-line boxes.

Table 18: Summary of Grammatical Forms and Semantic Functions in GP (SL) Clause Constituents

CLAUSE MODIFIER	RECAP	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER
			PREDICATE CENTRAL			
n-temp, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, NP, QP	NP	**n, prn, NP**	**vi, vt, vdir, vlink, adj, VP(non-SP), AP**		**n, prn, NP, Cl**	n, prn, prn-indef, n-spat, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, RNP, NP, QP
temp. location, temp. range, manner, cs-emphasis, etc.	disc-new, disc-emp	**actor, experiencer, processor, reactor, communicator, creator, owner, item, identified, changed, etc.**	**activity, experience, cognition, reaction, expression, creation, ownership, attribution, identification, process, etc.**		**patient, stimulus, phenomenon, affect, communique, created, owned, attribute, identifier, change, etc.**	temp. duration, frequency, spatial location, audience, recipient, beneficiary, accompany, source, target, manner, reason, degree, attribute, domain, evaluation, etc.
ATTRIBUTIVE	C.	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C.	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C.	ATTRIBUTIVE

ATTRIBUTIVE	C.	ATTRIBUTIVE	PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C.	POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER	C.	ATTRIBUTIVE
NP	n	n, prn, NP, adj, AP, RNP, prt-n, adj-quan, QP, dem, EmCl	aux, QP, neg		vdir, adv, VP(SP), prn-refl	n	n, prn, NP, adj, AP, RNP, prt-n, adj-quan, QP, dem, EmCl
entirety	i t e m	attribution, ownership, kinship, quantity, identification, etc.	aspect, frequency, capability, intention, negation, cs-emphasis		degree, manner, scope, mood, purpose, spatial direction	i t e m	attribution, ownership, kinship, quantity, identification, cs-emphasis, etc.

6 *Clause Types*

According to mood, GP (SL) has five clause types, including indicative, interrogative, imperative, subjunctive, and interjective, to express different intentions of the speech. Indicative clasues realize statements; interrogative clauses, questions; imperative clauses, commands; subjunctive clauses, wishes; interjective clauses, emotions.

6.1. Indicative Clause
Indicative clauses, also called declarative clauses, are statements used to talk about an affair or a thing. GP (SL) indicative clauses are widely used to convey various messages in communication, such as mentioning an event, depicting a person or a thing, explaining a feature, expressing a point of view or feeling, etc. Grammatically, indicative clauses follow the general clause structure discussed in section 2. Clause Structure and section 3. Claues Constituents. Usually, they are said in a plain intonation with a bit falling at the end. Here are some examples.

WS1.2 ဂါရ်   လာ်း   ဆာ့်တဲ   ဒေ   ခုန်   ဆိုန်အူယေန်
       gar   lʌh   sʌʔ.tɛ   de   kʰu.nʌ   son.ʔu.jen
       3D   move to (go)   fast   SELF   LOC   garden
       prn-per   VP   RNP
       SUBJECT   PREDICATE   CLAUSE MODIFIER
       They went fasting in a garden.

WS59.13 ရလေး   အော   ကုံရံယံရံး   ညိုးညိုး
       ra·leh   ʔɔ   kʌr.jər   ɲoh.ɲoh
       husband   1S   beautiful   exceedingly
       NP   AP
       SUBJECT   PREDICATE
       My husband is very beautiful.

WS7.11 ကုန်   အုန်   မ္လိဝ်း   လဂါ
       kun   ʔʌn   mɤh   la·ga
       father   3S   be   dragon
       NP   vlink   n
       SUBJECT   PREDICATE CENTRAL   COMPLEMENT
       His father is a dragon.

WS10.6 အော   ကုံရံဖေ   အုန်
       ʔɔ   kʌr.ve   ʔʌn
       1S   pity   3S
       prn-per vt   prn-per
       SUBJECT PREDICATE CENTRAL   COMPLEMENT
       I pitied it.

GP (SL) indicative clauses are not always affirmative, like the examples shown. They can be used to express negative ideas by using the negator ကာ /ka/. Here are some examples of **negative indicative clause**.

WS42.17

ယဲ	ကာ	ဇေင်	စိ
jɛ	ka	veŋ	ci·
1P (exclusive)	NEG (IND)	move back (go/come)	POLITE
prn-per	neg	vdir	prt-mood
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE CENTRAL	cs-mood
	PREDICATE		

We don't go.

WS56.5

ဟော	ဟောခံမ်	ကာ	ဖ	ဟော	ဟောည်�‌ဘ္လော့	ဂါရ်	နာင်
hɔ	hɔ.kʰəm	ka	pʰa·	hɔ	hɔj.blɔˠ	gar	naŋ
palace	king	NEG (IND)	be equal to	palace	white water-snail	and	princess
NP		neg	vt	NP			
		PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.				
SUBJECT		PREDICATE CENTRAL		COMPLEMENT			

The king's palace could not compare with the palace of White Water-snail and the princess.

WS11.2

ကာ	မ္ဝိဝ်း	ဂ္ဝိဝ်	ပ္ဝုန်	ဒါး	ဘီ
ka	mˠh	gˠ	pʌn	dah	bi
NEG (IND)	be	EMP-only	Emb-OBJ	say	people
neg	vlink	prt-mood	NP		
PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	cs-mood	COMPLEMENT		
PREDICATE CENTRAL					

You shouldn't say that.
LT: It is not what a man should say.

6.2. Interrogative Clause

Interrogative clauses bring a query manner. According to the way of asking the question, GP (SL) interrogative clauses can be classified into four types.

6.2.1. Content Interrogative Clause

GP (SL) content interrogative clasues are questions asking for specific details by using interrogative pronouns, [35] such as ဆော /se/ 'what,' အဆော /ʔa·se/ 'who,' ခ္ဝိည်မော /kʰˠj.mɔ/ 'how,' ဆောအ္ဝန်မ္ဝိဝ်း /se.ʔʌn.mˠh/ 'why,' etc. Here are some examples.

WS15.7

ဆော	အ္ဝုန်	မ္ဝိဝ်း	အီန္ဝိဝ်
se	ʔʌn	mˠh	ʔi.nˠ
what?	3S	be	above, up
interrog	prn-per	vlink	n
COMPLEMENT	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

What is it up there?

---

[35] See section 9.1.10.6. Interrogative (interrog).

WS58.5

ခေ	မိ	လၢ်း	ည	ဟာအိၣ်
se	mi	lʌh	ɲa	ha.ʔɯ
what?	2S	move to (go)	do	here
interrog	prn-per	vdir	interrog	n
POST-C. MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER

Why do you come here? (LT: What do you come to do here?)[36]

WS54.6

ဘုၣ်မော	မိ	ဒါ;	ရှုရ်း	လဲ
bʌr.mɔ	mi	dah	ruɹ̥	lɛ
how many?	2S	say	charge	cart
interrog	prn-per	vt	NP	
CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	

How much would you say the charge of the carts?

WS33.4

ဟမော	မိ	ဝ္ည်
ha.mɔ	mi	gwaˑj
what place?	2S	dwell, stay
interrog	prn-per	vi
CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.

Where do you live?

အုမော	မိ	တိၣ်	ပေါမ်
ʔu.mɔ	mi	tɯŋ	pɔm
what time(PAST)	2S	cook	rice
interrog	prn-per	vt	n
CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT

When did you cook?

အခေ	အုၣ်န်	မ္ဝ်း	ဟား
ʔaˑse	ʔʌn	mɤh	ha⫪
who?	3S	be	QUE.self
interrog	prn-per	vt	q
COMPLEMENT	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	cs-mood

Who is he?

In order to form a content interrogative clause, an interrogative which represents the content questioned is followed by a clause in general clause structure but omitting the information which is asked for. It may be considered to front the related constituent, which is represented by an interrogative, and make it the topic of the clause. If it is a question for reason, the interrogative ခေ...ည /se...ɲa/ 'why?' is used. This interrogative is composed of two parts and literally means 'what ... to do?' The first part starts the clause; the second part follows the PREDICATE CENTRAL. Sometimes, a question particle ဟာ /ha/ is optionally added at the end of a content interrogative clause to express self-asking. A content interrogative clause generally does not have a raising intonation at the end but sounds like an indicative clause in actual articulation. When ဟာ /ha/ is attached, there is a raising intonation at the end of the clause.
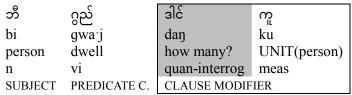
When the exact quantity is questioned, the content interrogative clause does not employ any proper interrogatives but uses an interrogative quantifier ဒါၣ် /daŋ/, which literally means 'big,' with a measure to form an interrogative quantifier phrase, filling the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER of a clause. Comparing with the usage of content interrogative ဘုၣ်မော /bʌr.mɔ/ 'how many, how much' that is usually placed at the beginning of an interrogative clause, the interrogative quantifier phrase can be put

---

[36] Compare another interrogative clause ခေမိရ္ရ်ဟာအိၣ် /se.mi.rʌr.ha.ʔɯ/'what are you doing here?'

at the beginning of the clause or at the position where it is in the corresponding indicative clause to answer the question. However, the former way is considered more 'standard,' good GP (SL). Here are two examples.

ဒါင်	နာရိ		မိ	အိတ်	ရမ္ဲၢဝ်ပိ
daŋ	na.ri		mi	ʔit	ra·m̥ɤ.pi
how many?	UNIT(time,hour)		2S	sleep	last night
quan-interrog	meas-temp		prn-per	vi	n-temp
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

How many hours do you sleep last night?

ဘိ	ဝ္ဉည်	ဒါင်	ကူ
bi	gwa·j	daŋ	ku
person	dwell	how many?	UNIT(person)
n	vi	quan-interrog	meas
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

How many persons live (there)?

6.2.2. Option Interrogative Clause

GP (SL) uses a pair of parallel indicative clauses to provide options for the audiance to choose in answering a question of preference. Each clause follows general structure pattern. There is no grammatical linker between the two clauses. The parallelism of the two clauses is the main distinctive feature of the option interrogative clause type. Sometimes, intonation rises a bit at the end of both clauses; sometimes, it rises a bit at the end of the first clauses but falls a bit at the end of the second one. However, there is almost no prolonged interval between the two clauses that they sound like one in actual speech. For example,

အုင်	အိအ္ိုဝ်	အုင်	အိတည်
ʔu·ŋ	ʔi.ʔɯ	ʔu·ŋ	ʔi.ta·j
like, love	this one	like, love	that one
vt	n	vt	n
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
Cl.1		Cl.2	

Do you love this one or that one?

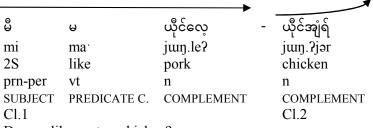| အုင်	အိအ္ိုဝ်	အုင်	အိတည်
ʔu·ŋ	ʔi.ʔɯ	ʔu·ŋ	ʔi.ta·j
like, love	this one	like, love	that one
vt	n	vt	n
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
Cl.1		Cl.2	

Do you love this one or that one?

In actual speech, in order to enhance smoothness and economy of language usage, the main part of the clauses is omitted in the second clause but only the option is stated. For example,

မိ	မ	ယှိင်လေ့		မိ	မ	ယှိင်အျံ့ရ်
mi	ma·	jɯŋ.leʔ		mi	ma·	jɯŋ.ʔjər
2S	like	pork		2S	like	chicken
prn-per	vt	n		prn-per	vt	n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
Cl.1				Cl.2		

Do you like pork or chicken?

can be said in this way,

မိ	မ	ယှိင်လေ့	-	ယှိင်အျံ့ရ်
mi	ma·	jɯŋ.leʔ		jɯŋ.ʔjər
2S	like	pork		chicken
prn-per	vt	n		n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		COMPLEMENT
Cl.1				Cl.2

Do you like port or chicken?

If the message is clear in the context, only the options are stated in both clauses, like this,

ယှိင်လေ့	-	ယှိင်အျံ့ရ်
jɯŋ.leʔ		jɯŋ.ʔjər
pork		chicken
n		n
COMPLEMENT		COMPLEMENT
Cl.1		Cl.2

Port or chicken?

In whichever case, the articulation pattern is a bit different from the unabridged form that the first clause or option can be with a rising or falling intonation, while the second option is always said with a rising intonation at the end.

6.2.3. Yes-or-no Interrogative Clause

Yes-or-no interrogative clause can be considered a special type of option interrogative clause, which realizes a question requesting an answer either positive or negative. GP (SL) forms a yes-or-no interrogative clause based on the general clause structure and adds the question particles ဂော /kɔ/[37] following the PREDICATE CENTRAL and preceeding the POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER, if any. Here is an example.

---

[37] There is another question particle ပည် /pa·j/ which has a non-GP (SL) origin but sometimes is used in GP (SL). It precedes the PREDICATE of a clause in genreal structure when it is used to form an yes-or-no interrogatrive clause. Here is an example using both ပည် /pa·j/ and ဂော /gɔ/.

Pock13.7	ပုန်လွတ်	မိ	ဒါင်	ညိုး	ပည်	နံပ်	ဂော
	pʌn.lut	mi	daŋ	ŋoh	pa>j	nəp	gɔ
	sin, trespass(?)	2S	big, great	really, truly	Y/N ?	know	Y/N?
	NP		AP		prt-q	vt	prt-q
	SUBJECT		PREDICATE CENTRAL		cs-mood	PREDICATE C.	cs-mood

Do you know that you sin greatly?

WS33.3

မိ	ယွိုၚ်ဝ်	ကော	ဒေ	ကုန်	ဒေ	မာ
mi	jɤ	kɔ	de	kun	de	ma
2S	possess	Y/N?	SELF	father	SELF	mother
prn-per	vt	q	prn-refl	n	prn-refl	n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	cs-mood	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT

Do you have parents?

A yes-or-no interrogative clause can be formed without a question particle in two ways. One way is using a negator to provide a negative option and making it follow its positive counter-option. This results a pattern of verb/adjective-negator-verb/adjective. For example,

မိ	ဗေၚ်	ကာ	ဗေၚ်
mi	veŋ	ka	veŋ
2S	move back (go/come)	NEG (IND)	go/come
prn-per	vdir	neg	vdir
SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL		

Do you go or not?

Another way to form a yes-or-no interrogative clause without a question particle is having the interrogative the same grammatical structure as an indicative clause. In this case, the yes-or-no interrogative clause contrasts with an indicative clause by intonation when it is articulated. It is said in a bit raising pitch at the end, while an indicative clause in a bit falling pitch at the end. For example,

ဟောမ်	ယာ်ံ	ဟောမ်	ယာ်ံ
hɔm	jʌʔ	hɔm	jʌʔ
eat (rice)	SURE	eat (rice)	SURE
vt	prt-mood	vt	prt-mood
Have you eaten yet?		I've eaten.	

6.2.4. Rhetorical Interrogative Clause

GP (SL) sometimes use an interrogative clause to convey an idea not in a mood of query. That is, it is not a real question. It takes the form of an interrogative clause but functions like an indicative clause. This is called rhetorical interrogative clause. Content interrogative clause, option interrogative clause, and yes-or-no interrogative clause can be used rhetorically.

Rhetorical content interrogative clause is usually used to nullifer an idea, specifically what the interrogative represents. Besides the context, the usage of aspect auxiliary verb ဒိ /di/ can help distinguish a rhetorical content interrogative clause from a real one. Here are two examples.

WSR2-12.2

ခ္�ိည်မော	မိ	ဒိ	ညာ	ဒေ	လေꩮ	ဇောမ်	ဟောည်	အိုၚ်ဝ်
kʰɤj.mɔ	mi	di	ɲa	de	leh	ɟɔm	hɔj	ʔɯ
how?	2S	WILL	do	SELF	move down	along with	water-snail	this
interrog	prn-per	aux-asp	vt	VP		RNP		
CLAUSE MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

LT: How will you do to go down with a snail?
FT: You can't do (in no way can do) anything to go down with a snail.

WS42.10	အဆေ	ဒိ	အုၚ်	မိ
	ʔa·se	di	ʔu·ŋ	mi
	who?	WILL	like, love	2S
	interrog	aux-asp	vt	prn-per
	SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C	COMPLEMENT

LT: Who will love you?
FT: No one will love you.

Rhetorical option interrogative clause is usually used to make a selective sentence, providing different options in a particular situation, rather than really asking for a choice among options. A special question particle ဟိုဝ် /huɯ/ is employed. See section 5.2.9 Selective Sentence for details.

Rhetorical yes-or-no interrogative clause is usually used to show emotions or feelings which colour the idea. No explicit question particle is employed. The negative form of မိုဝ်း /mɤh/[38], that is ကမိုဝ်း /ka.mɤh/, is attached at the beginning of the clause that states what surprises the speaker. Here is an example.

Ab4.8	ကမိုဝ်း	မိ	ဟွည်း	ယံမ်	တ	အိုမ်	ပိ
	ka.mɤh	mi	hwa·jˠ	jəm	ta·	ʔom	pi
	QUE-RHE.neg	2S	FINISH	die	DIR	water	that
	q	prn-per	VP		RNP		
	cs-mood	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

LT: Isn't that you already died in the water?
FT: You should already died in the water but you didn't! (Surprise!)

6.3. Imperative Clause

Imperative clause realizes the mood of plea, request, command, etc. In GP (SL), there are two forms of imperative clauses. One has no particular marker; another one employs the verb ဒဲး /dɛh/, which primarily means 'give.' The ***unmarked imperative clause*** is used to give a command to the audience exclusively, regardless the number. Basically, it follows the general clause structure and only the second person pronoun can fill in SUBJECT. However, the second person pronoun can be omitted. Though the polite particle စိ /ci·/ can be added at the end of the clause, this type of imperative clause generally sounds more direct and even blunt because of its shortness. The COMPLEMENT of the transitive PREDICATE in an imperative clause sometimes is omitted. Here are some examples.

WS9.3	လောၚ	ပဲတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော	ဒိန်	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
	lɔŋ	pɛt	hɔj.blɔˠ	din	ɟɔm	ʔom
	float	AT ONCE	white water-snail	that	along with	water
	VP		NP		RNP	
	PREDICATE CENTRAL		COMPLEMENT		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

Float White Water-snail along the river!

WS12.2	မိ	မည်	ယာမ်
	mi	ma·j	jam
	2S	NEG(IMP)	weep
	prn-per	VP	
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL	

Don't weep!

---

[38] The positive form of မိုဝ်း /mɤh/ does not perform as a rhetorical question particle but a verbal particle. See section 9.2.2.3. Verbal Particle (prt-v).

WS19.5

နွ၆ရ်ႉလွ်ႉ	တ	အော	စိ
nwər.l̩uh	ta·	ʔɔ	ci·
remember	DIR	1S	POLITE
vi	RNP		prt-mood
PREDICATE CENTRAL	CLAUSE MODIFIER		cs-mood

Remember me please.

SPN5.1

ကာ	ဘွ်န်	တိုၚ်
ka	bɤn	tɯɯŋ
NEG (IND)	be allowed	cook
neg	vi	vt

No cooking

ဒ်ႉ /dɛh/ *imperative clause*, in contrast, can be used to make a request to anyone, including the speaker him/herself. It employs ဒ်ႉ /dɛh/ to form a compact clause.[39] The first person pronoun is omitted if it is the speaker who makes the request. The mood adverb ဘွ်ဝ် /bɤ/ can be inserted after ဒ်ႉ /dɛh/ and the mood particle စိ /ci·/ can be added at the end of the clause in order to show politeness. In general, this type of imperative clause sounds less strong than the unmarked one. Also, its grammatical structure is exactly the same as subjunctive clause structure.[40] It carries a mood closer to a plead than a command. Here are some examples.

WS53.2

ဒ်ႉ	မိ	ဒွ်ည်	ခြိရ်
dɛh	mi	dɤj	kʰrir
IMPER	2S	bring, take	gold
vt	prn-per	vt	n
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		
Cl.1			
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
	Cl.2		

Let you take the gold.

WS54.5

ဒ်ႉ	အော	တာၚ်	လွဲ	မိ	စိ
dɛh	ʔɔ	taŋ	lɛ	mi	ci·
IMPER	1S	load	cart	2S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	vi	NP		prt-mood
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT				
Cl.1					
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		cs-mood
	Cl.2				

May I load your carts please?

---

[39] See section 7.1. Compact Clause (CpCl).
[40] See section 6.4. Subjunctive Clause.

WSR2-31.7

ဒဲ့	ဘို့ဝ်	အော	ရၢမ်	ထိ	ပဲ	စိ
dɛh	bɤ	ʔɔ	rəm	tʰiˑ	pɛ	ciˑ
SUBJNC	REQ (still)	1S	borrow	bean	2P	POLITE
vt	adv-mood	prn-per	vt	NP		prt-mood
PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT				cs-mood
Cl.1						
		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		
		Cl.2				

May I borrow you beans please?

WSR2-49.9

နၢင်	ဒဲ့	ဟော့ည်ဘ္လော့,	ဒၢ့	ဇောမ်	ဇေင်	လ့ဲ
naŋ	dɛh	hɔj.blɔɤ	dʌʔ	jɔm	veŋ	lɛ
princess	IMPER	white water-snail	REMAIN	follow	move back (go/come)	cart
n	vt	n	VP			n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT				
Cl.1						
		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT
		Cl.2				

The princess asked White Water-snail to follow the carts back.

6.4. Subjunctive Clause

GP (SL) subjunctive clause is denoted by ဒဲ့ /dɛh/ also but to express wishes and desires, which is non-factual or hypothetical. The subject is always the speaker. Grammatically, both ဒဲ့ /dɛh/ imperative clause and subjunctive clause look the same grammatically. It is in context to distinguish between them. Here are two examples.

WS15.10

ဒဲ့	အုန်	လာ့	ဆင်ည်	ဆင်ည်
dɛh	ʔʌn	lʌh	saˑŋaj	siˑŋaj
SUBJNC	3S	move to (go)	far from	far from
vt	prn-per	vdir	AP	
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			
Cl.1				
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	
	Cl.2			

May he go far far away.

WS44.4

ဒဲ့	အုန်	လာ့	ဖ	တ	ရမောင်	အုန်
dɛh	ʔʌn	lʌh	faˑ	taˑ	raˑmɔŋ	ʔʌn
SUBJNC	3S	move to (go)	hang	DIR	neck	3S
vt	prn-per	VP		RNP		
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT					
Cl.1						
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		
	Cl.2					

May it go hang on his neck.

ဒ်ႝ	မိ	ယ်ူဝ်	ေဒ	ေပၐ	တ	ယဲ	တြ်ꩫ်	ဆꩫ်ꩬမ်	တြ်ꩫ်	ဆꩫ်ꩬမ်
dɛh	mi	jɤ	de	pɔ	ta·	jɛ	twən	sa·nʌm	twən	sa·nʌm
SUBJNC	2S	HAPPENED	SELF	arrive	DIR	1P (excl.)	every	UNIT (year)	every	UNIT (year)
vt	prn-per	VP			RNP		QP-n			
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT									
Cl.1										
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.			CLAUSE MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER			
	Cl.2									

May you visit us every year!

ဒ်ႝ	ြ[ဖ	မစ	မိ	စိ
dɛh	pʰra	ma·ca·	mi	ci·
SUBJNC	God	(god)help	2S	POLITE
vt	n	vt	prn-per	prt-mood
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			
Cl.1				
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood
	Cl.2			

May God help you.

6.5. Exclamation Clause

GP (SL) has a group of interjections[41] marking speaker's emotions that composes exclamation clauses. An exclamation clause has the general clause structure plus an interjection. The interjection can be put at the beginning or the end of the clause. For example,

Ab2.19	အာꩬ	ဟြည်ႛလ	ဟြည်ႛလ	က်ꩫ်	ဒါꩬ	ခ်ꩫည်	ဒိꩫ်
	ʔaʌ	hwa·jʅ.la·	hwa·jʅ.la·	kʌn	dah	kʰɤj	din
	Ah!	alright	alright	COND	say	like	that
	interj	parenthesis	parenthesis	conn	vt	RNP	
	INTERJ	PARENTHESIS	PARENTHESIS	conn	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

Ah [compromise]! Alright, alright, if you say like that.

WS24.8	က်ꩫ်အိမဲ	ေအာ	အိဝ်ꩬ
	kwən.ʔi.mɛ	ʔɔ	ʔɤʌ
	son	1S	Oh!
	NP		interj
	ADDRESS		INTERJ

Oh [address audience], my son!

Besides an explicit usage of interjection, exclamation clauses often employ adverbs such as ည်ꩬည်ꩬ /ŋohŋoh/ 'exceedingly' or other adverbial reduplicative forms[42] and have a fronting structure to move the emotion arousal element to the front, which is a position of emphasis.[43] When ည်ꩬည်ꩬ /ŋohŋoh/ 'exceedingly' is used, its preceding adjective is usually said in a prolonged manner.

---

[41]   For a list of GP (SL) interjections, see section 9.2.3. Interjection (interj).
[42]   See chapter 14. Reduplication.
[43]   See chapter 13. Fronting Clause Constituent.

7 *Extension of Clause*

In GP (SL), a compact clause and a sentence, as an extension of clause, can be illustrated in these formulae accordingly, summarising their possible elements and configurations.

Compact Clause =   P3: n-temp, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, NP, QP
                 + P2: NP
                 + P1: n, prn, NP
                 + C: vt, VP(non-SP)
                 + F1: n, prn, NP
                 + C': vi, vt, vdir, vlink, adj, VP(non-SP), AP
                 + F1': n, prn, NP, Cl
                 + F2': n, prn, prn-indef, n-spat, adv-cl, EmCl-temp, RNP, NP, QP
Sentence = $P1^n$: [1. conn-cl + 2. Cl],
                     [1. Cl.P3+P2+P1 + 2. conn-cl + 3.Cl.C+F1+F2],
                     Sent
            + C: [1. conn-cl + 2. Cl],
                     [1. Cl.P3+P2+P1 + 2. conn-cl + 3.Cl.C+F1+F2],
                     Sent
            + $F1^n$: [1. conn-cl + 2. Cl],
                     [1. Cl.P3+P2+P1 + 2. conn-cl + 3.Cl.C+F1+F2],
                     Sent

GP (SL) clause structure can be extended in two ways, by forming a compact clause or a sentence. Both of these structures make two or more clauses together but in different approaches. The former one is by contraction; the latter one is by connection.

7.1. Compact Clause (CpCl)
Strictly speaking, GP (SL) compact clause is not a kind of sentence but a clause construct which compresses two single clauses. Not any two clauses can form a compact clause. The first clause must have a transitive-PREDICATE and have its COMPLIMENT, which is the object of the transitive verb in its PREDICATE CENTRAL, the same as SUBJECT of the second clause. Consider this example.

WS55.5 ဧဧင်   စင် ဘီ   ရှ်ရ်   ကြိုဝ်
        veŋ   caŋ bi   rʌr   kro
        move back (go/come) hire people   make   basket
        vdir   vt   n   vt   n
        (She) went to hire people to make baskets.

This compact clause is composed by two clauses, ဧဧင်စင်ဘီ /veŋ.caŋ.bi/ '(she) went to hire people' and ဘီရှ်ရ်ကြိုဝ် /bi.rʌr.kro/ 'people made baskets.' Object of the first one and subject of the second one refer to the same thing that they are compacted and form a compact clause.

ဝေင်	စင်	ဘီ
veŋ	caŋ	bi
move back (go/come)	hire	people
vdir	vt	n

	ဘီ	ရ္ရ်	ကြို
	bi	rʌr	kro
	people	make	basket
	n	vt	n

↓

ဝေင်	စင်	ဘီ	ရ္ရ်	ကြို
veŋ	caŋ	bi	rʌr	kro
move back (go/come)	hire	people	make	basket
VP		n	vt	n
PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT		
Cl.1				

		SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
		Cl.2		

(She) went to hire people to make baskets.

A compact clause has its two clauses with different subjects. It can be used to express a various kind of semantic relationship between two clauses, showing the development of an idea.[44] Here are two more examples of compact clause.

WSR2-21.1	အော	ဒီ	တို့င်း	အော	လူမ်	အုန်	ပဲန်	ကွ္န်	အော	ဝါ	အော
	ʔɔ	di	tɤh	ʔɔ	lum	ʔʌn	pɛn	kwən	ʔɔ	va	ʔɔ
	1S	WILL	take	1S	nurse	3S	become	child	1S	kid	1S
	prn-per	VP				prn-per	vlink	NP			
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.				COMPLEMENT					
	Cl.1										

						SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		
						Cl.2				

I will takecare of it and it becomes my own child,

MGp138	ပဲ	တော,	အော	လ်း
	pɛ	tɔɤ	ʔɔ	lʌh
	2P	call	1S	move to (go)
	prn-per	vt	prn-per	vdir
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	
	Cl.1			

			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.
			Cl.2	

You called me to come.

It is noteworthy that when the compacted word or phrase is in RECAP, the verb of the first clause needs to be repeated. Here is an example.

---

[44] Compare with a clause having a reflexive SP verbal phrase in its POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER which gives information about the purpose of the action by the same subject. See section 10.2.1. Subject-Predicate (SP) Verbal Phrase.

ဒဲ့;	ဆပြွတ်	အော	အို့ဝ်
dɛh	sa·prwət	ʔɔ	ʔɯ
SUBJNC	turban	1S	this
vt	NP		
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		

ဆပြွတ်	အော	အို့ဝ်	အို့န်	လာ်;	စု	တ	ရမောင်	အို့န်
sa·prwət	ʔɔ	ʔɯ	ʔʌn	lʌh	fa·	ta·	ra·mɔŋ	ʔʌn
turban	1S	this	3S	go to	hang	DIR	neck	3S
NP			prn-per	VP			RNP	
RECAP			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

↓

WS44.4	ဒဲ့;	ဆပြွတ်	အော	အို့ဝ်	ဒဲ့;	အို့န်	လာ်;	စု	တ	ရမောင်	အို့န်
	dɛh	sa·prwət	ʔɔ	ʔɯ	dɛh	ʔʌn	lʌh	fa·	ta·	ra·mɔŋ	ʔʌn
	SUBJNC	turban	1S	this	SUBJNC	3S	go to	hang	DIR	neck	3S
	vt	NP			vt	prn-per	VP			RNP	
	Cl.1										
						Cl.2					

May my turban go hang on his neck.

7.2. Sentence (Sent)

GP (SL) joins together two or more clauses, which closely relate to one another semantically and structurally, and forms a sentence. These clauses, on their own, do not sound complete in reading, nor communicate a complete message. However, they are not mutually embodied in one another. There are several types of sentences marked by different connectives.

7.2.1. Coordinative (COOR) Sentence

Coordinative sentence is composed of at least two clauses that state related actions side by side. There is no priority or order among these clauses, no matter in terms of time or logic. GP (SL) uses coordinative connective ပည် /pa·j/, putting in the position after the SUBJECT of each clause, to build up the pattern of coordinative sentence. Occasionally, clauses of a coordinative sentence are composed in great similarity. This parallelism is not a grammatical criterion for coordinative sentence, but a kind of rhetoric. For example,

M44-13.3	အို့န်	ပည်	တို့ဝ်;	ဘော့	ပည်	ဒါ;
	ʔʌn	pa·j	tɤh	be͡ɛɣ	pa·j	dah
	3S	COOR	take	literature	COOR	say
	prn-per	conn-cl	vt	n	conn-cl	vt
	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	<link>	PREDICATE C.
	part 1				part 2	

He took the literature (writing) and said, ...

M44-11.2	ပည်	လို	ရဲန်	ခဲ့,	တ	ဂါင်	ပည်	လို	ရဲန်	ခဲ့,	ဟောမ်	တ	စရောပ်
	pa·j	lo	rɛn	kʰɛɣ	ta·	gaŋ	pa·j	lo	rɛn	kʰɛɣ	hɔm	ta·	ca·rɔp
	COOR	NEED	prepare	guest	DIR	house	COOR	NEED	prepare	guest	eat	DIR	rest-house
	conn-cl	CpCl					conn-cl	CpCl					
	part 1						part 2						

On the one hand (I) needed to prepare for guests at home, on the other hand (I) needed to prepare for guests to eat at the guest house.

A coordinative structure can also be shown without the connective ပည် /pa·j/, especially when it is embedded in another sentence, but by reduplication of certain word(s)[45] and the parallel structure formed. Consider this example.

M44-16.3	ဘိုည်	ကာ	နံပ်	တဲမ်	ဘိုည်	ကာ	ပဲန်	ြပည်	ပုၚ်	အၚ်	ပုၚ်	လို	မီ
	bɤj	ka	nəp	tɛm	bɤj	ka	pɛn	gra·j	pʌn	ʔu·ŋ	bʌn	lo	mi
	CONCS	NEG	able	write	CONCS	NEG	become	tell	Emb-OBJ	love	Emb-OBJ	wish	2S
	Cl.1				Cl.2								

coordinative sentence
concessive sentence – part 1
Even though you cannot write and you won't tell what you love and wish,

	မီ	ကုၚ်	နံပ်	ဒါး	အော	အၚ်	ညိုး	မီ	ဒိန်	မှာန်	မီ	ကုရ်ဆေ	ဘိုဝ်	အော	စိ
	mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔu·ŋ	ŋoh	mi	din	man	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ci·
	2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that	beg	2S	pity	REQ	1S	POLITE
	Cl.3									Cl.4					

specified conditional sentence
concessive sentence – part 2
if only you can say 'I really love you,' I beg that you still pity me please.

Cl.1 and Cl.2 in this example make a coordinative sentence, which is the first part of a concessive sentence. Coordinative connective ပည် /pa·j/ does not appear in either Cl.1 or Cl.2, but concessive connective ဘိုည် /bɤj/, which is the connective of its host sentence, repeats in each of them.

7.2.2. Selective (SELECT) Sentence

Selective sentence contains two or more clauses, stating a different option each for selection of one from those. It can be an or-or selection or an either-or selection. An *or-or selective sentence* has options logically compatible to one another; an ***either-or selective sentence*** has options logically incompatible to one another. Both types of selective sentences have their options in a question form by employing the question particle ဟိုဝ် /hɯ/[46] at the end of each clause of the options. Here are two examples, one for logical compatible options and one for logically incompatible options.

WSR40.6-8	ဇၚ်း	တ	ကွန်	ပုရ်မာၚ်	ဟိုဝ်	ကာနံပ်
	ɟʌh	ta·	kwən	pʌr.maŋ	hɯ	ka.nəp
	fall, decline	DIR	son, daughter	chief	OPTION	not know
	vi	RNP			prt-q	parenthesis
	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER			cs-mood	PARENTHESIS
	part 1					

(It) may fall on a chief's son,

	ဇၚ်း	တ	ကွန်	ဟောခံမ်	ဟိုဝ်	ကာနံပ်
	ɟʌh	ta·	kwən	hɔ.kʰəm	hɯ	ka.nəp
	fall, decline	DIR	son, daughter	king	OPTION	not know
	vi	RNP			prt-q	parenthesis
	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER			cs-mood	PARENTHESIS
	part 2					

or (it may fall) on a king's son,

---

[45] See also chapter 14. Reduplication

[46] ဟိုဝ် /hɯ/ is a Shan loan word which means 'not know.' It is used together with GP (SL) 'not know,' ကာနံပ် /ka.nəp/. When they are put side by side, in articulation, there is a raising intonation at ဟိုဝ် /hɯ/ and then falling at ကာနံပ် /ka.nəp/.

ဇၢ်း	တ	ကွၢ်န်	ဖွၢန်	ဟီၣ်	ကာနၢ်ပ
ɹʌh	ta˙	kwən	pʰlan	huɯ	ka.nəp
fall, decline	DIR	son, daughter	poor	OPTION	not know
vi	RNP			prt-q	parenthesis
PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER			cs-mood	PARENTHESIS
part 3					

or (it may fall) on a poor child

WSR6.4-5

မ္ဂၤ်း	ကွၢ်န်အီမဲ	ဟီၣ်	မ္ဂၤ်း	ကွၢ်န်အီပုၢ်န်	ဟီၣ်
mɤh	kwən.ʔi.mɛ	huɯ	mɤh	kwən.ʔi.pʌn	huɯ
be	boy	OPTION	be	girl	OPTION
vlink	n	prt-q	vlink	n	prt-q
PRED.C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood	PRED.C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood
part 1			part 2		

selective sent.
The maids-of-honor were not able to distinguish whether it is a boy or a girl.

အပျိၤဒေါ	ဂဲ	ကာ	နၢ်ပ	ဒေ	ကုၢ်ရၢ်ကၢး
ʔa˙pjo.dɔ	gɛ	ka	nəp	de	kʌr.kah
maid-of-honor	3P	NEG(IND)	be able to	SELF	distinguish
NP		VP			
SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.			
Cl					

The maids-of-honor were not able to distinguish whether it is a boy or a girl.

7.2.3. Chronolgoical (CHRON) Sentence

GP (SL) has three kinds of chronologial sentence. They are general chronologial sentence, reversal chronologial sentence, and concurrent chronologial sentence.

7.2.3.1. General Chronologial Sentence

General chronologial sentence is composed of two or more clauses in temporal order that describe a series of continuous actions. Chronologial connective ဘၢ်န် /bən/ 'after' is employed in the first clause, sitting in the position before the SUBJECT of the clause. In the second to the last clause, connective such as စိ /ci/ is employed, sitting in the position after the SUBJECT of each clause. These connectives are often used in pairs, like ဘၢ်န်...စိ /bən...ci/. A chronological sentence consisting more than four clauses is rare. Here is an example.

WSR 22.1-4

ဘၢ်န်	မာ	အုၢ်န်	ဒါး	တ	အုၢ်န်	ခိုည်	ဒီန်
bən	ma	ʔʌn	dah	ta˙	ʔʌn	kʰɤj	din
CHRON-after	mother	3S	say	DIR	3S	like	that
conn-cl	NP		vt	RNP		RNP	
<link>	SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER	
part 1							

After his mother said to him like that,

ဟောည်ခ္ဘော,	စီ	မာ့	ကြုပ်		မာ	ဒေ
hɔj.blɔˠ	ci	mʌʔ	grup		ma	de
white water-snail	CHRON	sit	do obeisance		mother	SELF
n	conn-cl	VP			NP	
SUBJECT	<link>		PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER	
part 2						

White Water-snail then did obeisance to his mother,

စီ	ဒါး	ထဲင်	အိုင်း	မာ	မီ	မည်	ဟ	ရ	အော	အေ့
ci	dah	tʰɛŋ	ʔɤʌ	ma	mi	maˑj	haˑ	raˑ	ʔɔ	ʔeʔ
CHRON	say	PROG-also	Oh!	mother	2S	NEG(IMP)	be anxious	with	1S	REQ
conn-cl	VP		Cl							
<link>	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT							
part 3										

and then he also said, 'Oh, mother! Don't worry about me!'

7.2.3.2. Reversal Chronologial Sentence

Reversal chronological sentence is composed of two clauses in reversal temporal order. That is, the first clause states the action which happens later; the second clause states the action which happens first. Reversal chronological connective ကြုည် /krɤj/ is employed, sitting before the SUBEJCT of the first clause. The second clause is left unmarked. This kind of chronological sentence makes the preceeding action more prominent than the following action. Here is an example.

WSR2-38.3-4	ကွဲန်နှာင်	အိုန်	ဒိန်	ကြုည်	အိုန်	ဘေည်	ဆပွဲတ်	ဒေ
	kwən.naŋ	ʔʌn	din	krɤj	ʔʌn	bej	saˑpwət	de
	princess	3S	that	CHRON-not yet	3S	throw	(head) turban	SELF
	NP			conn-cl	prn-per	vt	NP	
	RECAP			<link>	SUBJ.	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	
	part 1							

Before his princess threw her turban,

အိုန်	ဒါး	တ	ဖွဲမ်	ဒေ
ʔʌn	dah	taˑ	pʰɤm	de
3S	say	DIR	mind	SELF
prn-per	vt	RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER		
part 2				

she prayed, ...

7.2.3.3. Concurrent Chronologial Sentence

Concurrent chronologial sentence is composed of two clauses. The first clasue states the temporal information, which is defined by a certain event and when the second cluase happens. Concurrent chronological connective ဒင် /dəŋ/ or ကုံန် /gʌn/ is employed in the first clause. ဒင် /dəŋ/ sits before the SUBEJCT; ကုံန် /gʌn/ sits after the SUBEJCT. In the second clause, connective is optionally used. If a connective is to be used, စီ /ci/, for instance, is employed, sitting in the position after the SUBJECT of each clause. Here is an example.

WSR 11.4-5	ဒၣ်	ကွၣ်နာင်	ကဖဲအိၣ်မ်	ဒေ	ယ္ဉ်ဝ်	ဒေ	ဆုၣ်ဂ္ဝ်း
	dəŋ	kwən.naŋ	ka·vɛʔ.ʔom	de	jɤ	de	sʌn.gɤh
	CHRON-when	princess	play water	SELF	find	SELF	look upward
①	conn-cl	n	VP				
②							
③	<link>	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.				
④	part 1						

When the princes went to bathe and looked up

	ဖာင်	တေင်လူ့းလူ့း	ရဂ္ထည်	ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော့,	ဒိၣ်	အိၣ်	စီ	ဒါ့း
	pʰɔŋ	teŋ.luh.luh	ri·gwa·j	hɔj.blɔɤ	din	ʔʌn	ci	dah
	raft	shining yellow	dwelling place	white water-snail	that	3S	CHRON	say
①	NP					prn-per	conn-cl	vt
②								
③	COMPLEMENT					SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.
④	part 1 (cont')					part 2		

the very yellow raft where the White Water-snail dwelt, she said, ...

7.2.4. Contrastive (CONTR) Sentence

GP (SL) has two types of contrative sentences. The first type is to contrast two items or two events, which are shown in two clauses or two sentences that the second one has a meaning contrastive with, sometimes even opposite to, the first one. Contrastive connective ကုၣ်မ္ိဝ်း /kʌn.mɤh/ is used and put before the second clause. Here is an example.

WSR2-36.16	ဗေင်	မိ	ကုၣ်မ္ိဝ်း	ယဲ	ကာ	ဗေင်	စီ·
	veŋ	mi	kʌn.mɤh	jɛ	ka	veŋ	ci·
	go/come	2S	CONTR-in case of	1P (excl.)	NEG (IND)	go/come	POLITE
	vdir	prn-per	conn-cl	prn-per	VP		prt-mood
	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	<link>	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		cs-mood
	part 1		part 2				

You go! In case of us, we don't go.

The second type of contrative sentence is also composed of two parts but that the second one changes or turns the trend developed from the first one, by stating a shortcoming or something missed. Contrastive connectives such as မ္ိဝ်းဂ္ိဝ် /mɤh.gɤ/, မ္ိဝ်းလိုည် /mɤh.loj/, ကောည်လိုည် /kɔj.loj/, etc. are used in forming this type of contrative sentence. They are often put before the SUBJECT of the second part too. Here are two examples.

WSR 21.1-2	အိဝ်းလ	မိ	ကုၣ်	ကာ	ဗေင်	ဗောမ်	အော	ကာ နံပ် ခ္ိုည် ညာ	အေ့
	ʔɤ/.la·	mi	kʌn	ka	veŋ	ɟɔm	ʔɔ	ka.nəp.kʰɤj.ɲa	ʔeʔ
	alright!	2S	CAUSE-DED	NEG(IND)	back	along with	1S	what can I do?!	TRUE
	interj	prn-per	conn-cl	VP		RNP		parenthesis	prt-mood
	INTERJ	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		PARENTHESIS	cs-mood
	part 1								

Alright! Since you don't go with me, what can I do? (I can't do anything.)

မြိုင့်ဂိုဝ်	မီ	ကုန်	လ	ဘုန်ဒိန်	အူ	ဆင်ဂီ
mɤh.gɤ	mi	kʌn	laˑ	bən.din	ʔu	saˑŋi
CONTR	2S	COND	be good	after that	one	UNIT(day)
conn-cl	prn-per	conn-cl	adj	RNP		
<link>	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		
part 2						

But if you are good one day,

မီ	မည်	ဘိရ်	အော	စိ
mi	maˑj	bir	ʔɔ	ciˑ
2S	NEG(IMP)	forget	1S	POLITE
prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	cs-mood
part 2 (cont')				

please don't forget me.

WSR2-2.2-3	ဂါရ်	ပျု	ဒေ	ရမာ	ဟွည့်	ဘုိန်	ပူရ်	ဆန်မ်	ယဲ့
	gar	pjuˑ	de	raˑma	hwaˑjɤ	bɤn	pur	saˑnʌm	jʌʔ
	3D	make	SELF	family	FINISH	get	seven	year	ALREADY
	prn-per	VP		n	EmCl-temp				prt-mood
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER				cs-mood
	part 1								

They have married for seven years already,

ကောည်လိုည်	ဂါရ်	ကာ	ယှိုဝ်	ပဲတ်	ဒေ	ကွုန်ဝါ
kɔj.loj	gar	ka	jɤ	pɛt	de	kwən.va
CONTR-but	3D	NEG (IND)	possess	REMAIN	SELF	son and daughter
conn-cl	prn-per	VP				n
<link>	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.				COMPLEMENT
part 2						

but they still did not have a child.

7.2.5. Concessive (CONCS) Sentence

Concessive sentence has two parts. The first part shows admitting or accepting a particular situation and makes a concession; the second part expresses an opposite view to the typical development from the first part. There are two kinds of concessive sentence, factual concessive sentence and hypothetical concessive sentence.

7.2.5.1. Factual Concessive Sentence

Factual concessive sentence makes a concessive to an unarguable fact. It can be formed by using a pair of concessive connectives, ဘ် /bi/ and စံမ် /cəm/. While ဘ် /bi/ sits in the position after the SUBJECT in the first clause, စံမ် /cəm/ in the position after the SUBJECT in the second clause. For example,

Ab3. 13-14	အဉ္ဘျုတ်	ဘ်	ဂိုပ	ဒါး	ဂဲ	စံမ်	မေ့	ဟာဒိန်
	ʔaˑblut	bi	gɤp	dah	gɛ	cəm	meʔ	ha.din
	The Liar	CONCS-despite	PROG-even	say	3P	CONCS-however	chop	there
	n-prop	conn-cl	conn-cl	vt	prn-per	conn-cl	vt	n-spat
	SUBJECT	<link>	<link>	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	CL.MODIFIER
	part 1				part 2			

Despite the fact that The Liar even said (that), they chopped (the tree) there.

Sometimes, the particular situation to admit or accept for concession can be unstated explicitly or known by context that the first clause of a concessive sentence is omitted. Concessive connectives စံမ် /cəm/ for showing the concession should be used. This special kind of concessive sentence leaves space for the audience to imagine the situation or the situation is well understood in the culture. Here is an example.

WSR2-54.3

စံမ်	လို့	ၟုၚဲ	ပို၀်	အော	တာခုန်ဟောခံမ်	ယၟ်
cəm	lo	ɟu.ŋɛ	pɤ	ʔɔ	ta.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	jʌʔ
CONCS-however	NEED	obey	father-in-law	1S	king	SURE
conn-cl	VP		APP			prt-mood
<link>	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT			cs-mood
part 2						

Anyways, we need to obey my father-in-law, the king.

7.2.5.2. Hypothetical Concessive Sentence

Hypothetical concessive sentence makes a concession to a hypothetical situation or a fact which is not completely true to the speaker. That is, the speaker may not completely agree, may not want to accept, or even may not care about at all that situation. Hypothetical concessive connective ဘိုၟည် /bɤj/ is used to form this kind of concessive sentence. It is placed after the SUBJECT in the first clause and the second clause can be left unmarked. Here are some examples.

WSR8.7

အုၚ်န	ဘိုၟည်	မၟိဝ်း	ဟောည်	ထိုဝ်,	ဒေ	ပဲန	ကွၟန်ၑါ	အာည်
ʔʌn	bɤj	mɤh	hɔj	tʰɤɤ	de	pɛn	kwən.va	ʔaj
3S	CONCS-even.though	be	water snail	deserve	SELF	become	son and daughter	1D (incl)
prn-per	conn-cl	vlink	n	VP			NP	
SUBJ.	<link>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT	
part 1				part 2				

Despite the fact that it is a water snail, it deserve to be our child.

WS58.10

မိ	ဘိုၟည်	ကုၟရဲယံရဲး	အော	ကာ	အုၚ်	မိ
mi	bɤj	kʌr.jəɤ	ʔɔ	ka	ʔuˑŋ	mi
2S	CONCS-even.though	beautiful	1S	NEG (IND)	love	2S
prn-per	conn-cl	adj	prn-per	VP		prn-per
SUBJ.	<link>	PREDICATE C.	SUBJ.	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT
part 1			part 2			

Despite the fact that you are handsome, I won't love you.

M44-16.3	ဘိုိ်ည	ကာ	နဲပ်	တဲမ်	ဘိုိ်ည	ကာ	ပဲန်	ဂြည
	bɤj	ka	nəp	tɛm	bɤj	ka	pɛn	graˑj
	CONCS- even.though	NEG	able	write	CONCS- even.though	NEG	become	tell
	conn-cl		VP		conn-cl		VP	
	<link>		PREDICATE C.		<link>		PREDICATE C.	

hypothetical concessive sent-part 1
Even though you cannot write and you won't tell

ပိုန်	အုင်	ပိုန်	လို	မီ
pʌn	ʔuˑŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb-OBJ	like, love	Emb-OBJ	wish	2S
NP				
COMPLEMENT				

hypothetical concessive sent-part 1 (cont')
what you love and wish,

မီ	ကိုန်	နဲပ်	ဒါး	အော	အုင်	ည္ဟိုး	မီ	ဒိန်
mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɳoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	VP		Cl				
SUBJ	<link>	PRED. C.		COMPLEMENT				

hypothetical concessive sent-part 2
if only you can say 'I really love you,'

မှာန်	မီ	ကိုရ်ဇေ	ဘိုဝ်	အော	စိ
m̩an	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ciˑ
beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)	1S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood
PRED. C.	COMPLE/SUBJ	PRED. C.		COMPLE.	cs-mood

hypothetical concessive sent-part 2 (cont')
I beg that you still pity me please.

7.2.5.3. Imperative Concessive Sentence

Imperative concessive sentence makes a concession to a factual situation with disagreement or dissatisfaction and then gives a command. Imperative concessive connective ကာရင် /ka.raŋ/ is used to form this kind of concessive sentence. It is placed after the SUBJECT in the first clause and the second clause can be left unmarked. Mood adverb မေန် /men/ 'may, let' often is employed in the first clause. Here is an example.

မီ	ကာရင်	ကာ	ရိက်	မေန်	အော
mi	ka.raŋ	ka	rək	men	ʔɔ
2S	CONCS-let it be	NEG(IND)	love	may, let	1S
prn-per	conn-cl	neg	vt	adv-mood	prn-per
SUBJ.	<link>	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT

part 1

You don't love me, let it be,

မီ	မည်	ရအီရ်ႋ	အော	အေ့
mi	ma·j	ra·ʔiṟ	ʔɔ	ʔeʔ
2S	NEG(IMP)	hate	1S	REQ
prn-per	neg	vt	prn-per	prt-mood
SUBJ.	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	<mood>

part 2

but please don't hate me.

7.2.6. Causative (CAUSE) Sentence

Causative sentence in GP (SL) is expository, composed of two clauses, the first of which states the cause and the second the result. There are two types of causative sentences in GP (SL), explanatory causative sentence and deductive causative sentence.

7.2.6.1. Explanatory Causative Sentence

Explanatory causative sentence has the cause explaining the result. Explanatory causative connectives such as ကောပ် /kɔp/, ဘံန် /bən/, etc. are commonly used. They are located before the SUBJECT of the first clause. There is another set of causative connectives like, စင် /cəŋ/ and စင်ပဲန် /cəŋ.pɛn/, showing the result. စင် /cəŋ/ is put after the SUBJECT of the second or the last clause; စင်ပဲန် /cəŋ.pɛn/ is put before the SUBJECT of the last clause to mark the last action resulted. Either the explanatory causative connective or the resultant connective is enough to form a causative sentence. Sometimes, both are used in a long sentence or to put emphasis on the cause-effect logical relationship. Here is an example.

WSR 9.1-2	ဘံန်	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	ယှို၀်	ဒေ	ဆတိုင်	ခှည်	လဝ်	ဂဲ	ဒီန်
	bən	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	jɤ	de	sa·tuɯŋ	kʰɤj	la·w	gɛ	din
	CAUSE	king	HAPPENED	SELF	hear	like	address formally	3P	that
	conn-cl	n	VP			RNP			
	<link>	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.			CLAUSE MODIFIER			

part 1

Because/when the king heard their report like this

အုိႋန်	စင်	၀ိရ်	ဒါ့
ʔʌn	cəŋ	vir	dah
3S	RESULT	return (from)	say
prn-per	conn-cl	VP	
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.	

part 2

he replied, ...

It is noteworthy that, occasionally, chronological connective စီ /ci/ and စီပဲန် /ci.pɛn/ instead of စင် /cəŋ/ and စင်ပဲန် /cəŋ.pɛn/ are used to show the result. However, this is considered less correct or even incorrect in 'standard' GP (SL). Here are two examples.

WSR 6.4-7	ကောပ်	ကှိုတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊	ညာ ခှိုည် ဒိန်	
	kɔp	kɤt	hɔj.blɔˋ	ɲa.kʰɤj.din	
	CAUSE	give birth	white water-snail	like that	
①	conn-cl	v	n	parenthesis	
②	<link>	PRED. C.	COMPLEMENT	PARENTHESIS	
③	Cl.1				
④	part 1				

Because (she) gave birth a White Water-snail like that,

	မ္ယဝ်း	ကွန်အီမဲ	ဟှိုဝ်	မ္ယဝ်း	ကွန်အီပ္ဟန်	ဟှိုဝ်
	mɤh	kwən.ʔi.mɛ	huɪ	mɤh	kwən.ʔi.pʌn	huɪ
	be	boy	OPTION	be	girl	OPTION
①	vlink	n	q	vlink	n	q
②	PRED.C.	COMPLE.	cs-mood	PRED.C.	COMPLE.	cs-mood
③	Cl.2			Cl.3		
④	part 2					

whether it is either a boy or a girl,

	အပ္ယိုုဒေါ	ဂဲ	ကာ	နံပ်	ဒေ	ကှိုရ်ကားး
	ʔaˑpjo.dɔ	gɛ	ka	nəp	de	kʌr.kah
	maid-of-honor	3P	NEG (IND)	be able to	SELF	distinguish
①	NP		VP			
②	SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.			
③	Cl.4					
④	part 2 (cont')					

the maids-of-honor were not able to distinguish,

	စီပဲန်	ဂဲ	ဗရ်ခြီရ်	မ္ယဝ်း	ကာ	ဒၪh	ဗရ်ရၪန်	မ္ယဝ်း
	ci.pɛn	gɛ	vər.kʰrir	mɤh	ka	dʌh	vər.rɤn	mɤh
	CHRON-finally	3P	gold chain	YES-emp	NEG	strike	silver chain	YES-emp
①	conn-cl	prn-per	NP	prt-v	VP		NP	prt-v
②	<link>	SUBJ.	COMPLE.	cs-emp	PREDICATE C.		COMPLE.	cs-emp
③		Cl.5						
④	part 3							

finally, they strike neither the gold chain

	ကာ	ဒၪh	ပဲတ်	ယၪ?
	ka	dʌh	pɛt	jʌʔ
	NEG	strike	DONE	surely
①	VP			prt-mood
②	PREDICATE C.			cs-mood
③	Cl.6			
④	part 3			

or the silver chain.

Ab 1.2-3	ဘံၣ်	အိၣ်	ဆမာ	ချော,	ညာခိ့်ည်ဒိၣ်	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	ပိ	စိ	ဒဲ့
	bən	ʔʌn	sa·ma	chɔɣ	ɲa.kʰɤj.din	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	pi	ci	dɛh
	CAUSE	3S	prone to	lie	like this	king	that	CHRON	IMPER
	conn-cl	prn-per	VP		adv	NP		conn-cl	vt
	<link>	SUBJ.	PREDICATE C.		CL. MODIFIER	SUBJECT		<link>	PREDICATE C.
	part 1					part 2			

Because he was able to lie like this, the king then commanded

အမူအမာတ်	ဒေ	ပိ	လၢ်ꩻ	တိုည်	ဒဲ့	တာမ်ဖံၣ်	တ	အိၣ်
ʔa·mu.ʔa·mat	de	pi	lʌh	toj	dɛh	tam.ɹən	ta·	ʔʌn
official	SELF	that	go to	arrest	give	heavy sentence	DIR	3S
NP			VP		vt	n	RNP	
COMPLEMENT / SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CL. MODIFIER	
part 2 (cont')								

his officials to go arrest him and give him death sentence.

Sometimes, explanatory causative sentence can have its first clause furnishing a reason rather than a cause for the second clause. In this case, another causative connective ခိ့်ည် /kʰɤj/ is used, locating before the SUBJECT of the first clause. Generally, ခိ့်ည် /kʰɤj/ sounds softer than ကောပ် /kɔp/, ဘံၣ် /bən/, etc. and implies no good-or-bad judgement on the action or event. Here is an example.

WSR 5.1-2	ခိ့်ည်	ဆငီ	ဆၢ်ꩻတဲ	ဂါရ်	နၣ်ꩻ	လ	ပူရ်	ဆငီ	ဒိၣ်
	kʰɤj	sa·ŋi	sʌʔ.tɛ	gar	nʌʔ	la·	pur	sa·ŋi	din
	CAUSE.as	day	fast	3D	be full	exactly	seven	UNIT(time,day)	that
	conn-cl	NP			VP		QP		
	<link>	SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		
	part 1								

As the day they fasted completed seven good days,

ဂါရ်	စိ	ဇိရ်	ဇေၚ်	တ	ဟော	ဒေ
gar	ci	vir	veŋ	ta·	hɔ	de
3D	CHRON	return (from)	move back (go/come)	DIR	palace	SELF
prn-per	conn-cl	VP		RNP		
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		
part 2						

they went back to their palace.

7.2.6.2. Deductive Causative Sentence

Deductive causative sentence has the cause deducing the result. Manner adverb ဂံတ် /gət/ is used in the 'cause' part, introducing the cause for an involuntary or compulsive action which is stated in the 'result' part. Here is an example of a deductive causative sentence embedded in a rhetorical conditional sentence.[47]

WSR2-11.9-10	ကု့်ၣ်	မွိဝ်ꩻ	ဂံတ်	အမိၚ်	မီ	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်
	kʌn	mɤh	gət	ʔa·mi·ŋ	mi	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm
	COND	be	CAUSE-DED.so much that	command	2S	king
①	conn-cl	vlink	adv-mann	NP		
②	<link>	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT		
③	deductive causative sent-part 1 'Cause'					
④	rhetorical conditional sent-part 1					
	Since it is, you, the king's command					

---

[47] See section 7.2.7.3. Rhetorical Conditional Sentence and section 11.4. Sentence-in-Sentence Embedding.

	ဘုံပ်	လောင်	လေး	ကွဲန်	ဟောည်	အာည်	ဒီန်	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
	bʌp	lɔŋ	leh	kwən	hɔj	ʔaj	din	ɟɔm	ʔom
	INVOLUNTARY	float	move down	child	water-snail	1D (incl.)	that	along with	water
①	VP			NP			RNP		
②	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT			CLAUSE MODIFIER		
③	deductive causative sent-part 2 'Result'								
④	rhetorical conditional sent-part 1 (cont')								

that (we) can't help floating our little water-snail down the water,

	အော	မ္ညဝ်း	မာ	ဒီ	ဇောမ်	လေး	အုန်	ယာ့်
	ʔɔ	mɤh	ma	di	ɟɔm	leh	ʔʌn	jʌʔ
	1S	be	mother	WILL	follow	move down	3S	SURE
①	prn-per	vlink	n	VP			prn-per	prt-mood
②	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLE.	PREDICATE C.			COMPLE.	cs-mood
③								
④	rhetorical conditional sent-part 2							

being (its) mother, I will follow it down.

Occasionally, the first part of a deductive sentence is sent to the back, especially when it is short, taking an attributive PREDICATE or intransitive PREDICATE, and without COMPLEMENT, in order to make the result more prominent. Here is an example.

WSR 14.2-3	အော	ရက်	ည္ဝိုး	အုန်	အုန်	ကုရ်ယံရ်း	ဂံတ်	လူတ်လာည်
	ʔɔ	rək	ŋ̥oh	ʔʌn	ʔʌn	kʌr.jəɽ	gət	lut.laj
	1S	love	really	3S	3S	beautiful	CAUSE-DED. so.much.that	exceedingly, most
	prn-per	AP		prn-per	prn-per	adj	adv-mann	adv-deg
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLE.	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	POST-C. MODIFIER
	part 2 'Result'				part 1 'Cause'			

It's so beautiful that I really loved it

7.2.7. Conditional (COND) Sentence

A conditional sentence consists of two parts. The first part suggests a condition and the second part expresses the result under that condition. According to the semantic relationship between the two parts, there are three kinds of conditional sentences, that is, hypothetical conditional sentence, unconditional sentence, and rhetorical conditional sentence. However, GP (SL) only has one conditional connective, ကုန် /kʌn/. Besides the distinctive feature of unconditional sentence, it is in context that one kind can be distinguished from the others.

7.2.7.1. Hypothetical Conditional Sentence

Hypothetical conditional sentence has its first clause suggesting a hypothetical condition that its reality is unknown at the meantime and may or may not become a fact. Its second clause states the result under such condition. The conditional connective ကုန် /kʌn/ locates in the position after the SUBJECT in the first clause, while there is no explicit marker in the second clause. Here is an example.

WS17.6

အူရှဲ့	အယ်	ကုၣ်ၣ်	ဟ့ိဝ်ၣ်	အုၣ်ၣ်	အုၣ်ၣ်	ယဲမ်	(ဒေ)
ʔuɻ̥	ʔɛ	kʌn	hɤh	ʔʌn	ʔʌn	jəm	(de)
odour	1P (incl.)	COND	exhale	3S	3S	die	(SELF)
NP		conn-cl	vt	prn-per	prn-per	vi	(prn-refl)
SUBJECT		<link>	PREDICATE. C.	COMPLEMENT	SUBJECT	PREDICATE. C.	
part 1					part 2		

If our breath exhales to him, he will die.

Specified conditional sentence is a special kind of hypothetical conditional sentence that has a sufficient hypothetical condition to the result. This condition is adequate, even though there may be other conditions leading to the same result. Here is an example.

M44-16.3

မီ	ကုၣ်ၣ်	နုပ်	ဒါး	အော	အုၣ်	ညှိုး	မီ	ဒိၣ်ၣ်
mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɲoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	VP		Cl				
SUBJ	<link>	PRED. C.		COMPLEMENT				

hypothetical concessive sent-part 2
if only you can say 'I really love you,'

မ့ှာန်	မီ	ကုၣ်ရဲ့ဖေ	ဘ့ုၣ်ဝ်	အော	စီ
m̥an	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ciˑ
beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)	1S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood
PRED. C.	COMPLE/SUBJ	PREDICATE C.		COMPLE.	cs-mood

hypothetical concessive sent-part 2
I beg that you still pity me please.

7.2.7.2. Unconditional Sentence

Unconditional sentence expresses a special condition which is uncondition. That is, the result is the same in whatever condition. Indefinite pronoun is employed in the condition clause that it is the distinctive feature of unconditional sentence. Sometimes, interrogative instead of indefinite pronoun is used. However, this is considered less correct or even wrong in 'standard' GP (SL). The usage of the conditional connective ကုၣ်ၣ် /kʌn/ is optional. In order to put emphasis on the result, the generalizative connective စံမ် /cəm/[48] sometimes is added in the second clause after the SUBJECT. Here are two examples.

WSR2-14.6-7

ဟောည်ဘ္လော့	ရေတတ်	ဟာမ့ှာၣ်း	အဆော	ကာ	ဘ့ုၣ်ၣ်	ကဗဲ့
hɔj.blɔɤ	rɔt	ha.m̥ʌh	ʔaˑse	ka	bɤn	kaˑvɛʔ
white water-snail	reach	any place	anyone	NEG (IND)	be allowed	play
n	vi	prn-indef	prn-indef	VP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CL. MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		
part 1			part 2			

Wherever White Water-snail arrives, no one is allowed to play it.

---

[48]   For the usage of generalizative connective စံမ် /cəm/, see section 7.2.8. Generalizative (GEN) Sentence.

WSR37.10

အုၵ်ႏ	ကုၵ်ႏ	ရေၵ်ꩻ	ဒေ	ꩡိၚ်	ပြေႃ	ဘီမꩻꩻ
ʔʌn	kʌn	rɔt	de	ɟeŋ	prɔ	bi.m̥ʌh
3S	COND-U	reach	SELF	stand	beside, near	anybody
prn-per	conn-cl	VP			n-ref	prn-indef
					RNP	
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.			CLAUSE MODIFIER	
part 1						

No matter he stood beside whom,

ဘီ	စꩻမ်	ရှုပ်	ပဲတ်	အုၵ်ႏ
bi	cəm	rup	pɛt	ʔʌn
people	GEN	drive (sb.) out	DONE OFF	3S
n	conn-cl	VP		prn-per
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT
part 2				

people drove him away immediately

7.2.7.3. Rhetorical Conditional Sentence

A rhetorical conditional sentence is also made by two clauses with the conditional connective ကုꩻꩻ /kʌn/ sitting in the position after the SUBJECT in the first clause, but to introduce a fact or to affirm a premise in order to set off a judgment stated in the second clause. Hence, semantically, the two clauses do not in a condition-result relationship but a kind of compare and contrast. Hence, it is not a conditional sentence per se but a rhetorical one. Here is an example.

WSR21.1

မီ	ကုꩻꩻ	ကာ	ꩡေၚ်	ꩡောမ်	အော	ကာ နꩻပ် ခိုꩻ ꩺ	အေꩻ
mi	kʌn	ka	veŋ	ɟɔm	ʔɔ	ka.nəp.kʰɤj.ɲa	ʔeʔ
2S	COND-R-since	NEG (IND)	move back (go/come)	along with	1S	what can I do?!	TRUE
prn-per	conn-cl	VP		RNP		parenthesis	prt-mood
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		PARENTHESIS	cs-mood
part 1						part 2	

LT: If you won't go with me, what can I do?
FT: Since you don't go with me, nothing I can do.

7.2.8. Generalizative (GEN) Sentence

Generalizative sentence is made up of two parts, each of which usually is realized in a clause. One clause states a generalized situation for the fact stated in another clause. There is only one generalizative connective for the 'fact' part, namely စꩻမ် /cəm/, meaning 'still' literally. It sits after the SUBJECT in the 'fact' part and marks the fact happening under certain generalized situation. There are two generalizative connectives for the 'situation' part, namely တꩻꩻꩻ /twən/ and မော /mɔ/. They are used in pair with စꩻမ် /cəm/, such as တꩻꩻꩻ...စꩻမ် /twən...cəm/ and စꩻမ်...မော /cəm...mɔ/. တꩻꩻꩻ /twən/, sitting before the SUBJECT in 'situation' part, means 'every' literally and marks the generalized situation that makes the fact happen. Hence, a တꩻꩻꩻ...စꩻမ် /twən...cəm/-sentence can be named ***positive generalizative sentence***. မော /mɔ/, sitting before the SUBJECT in 'situation' part, means 'until' literally and marks the generalized situation that stops the fact. Hence, စꩻမ်...မော /cəm...mɔ/–sentence can be named ***negative generalizative sentence***. It is noteworthy that a positive generalizative sentence usually has 'situation' part first and then 'fact' part; a negative generalizative sentence usually has 'fact' part first and then 'situation' part. Here are two examples, one for each kind.

WSR 17.1

တွ့ၣ်	မာ	အၣ်နၢ	ယာဖာ့ည်	လ်း	ပဲ့း	ဂါရ	ဟောမ်	ပ္ပွ
twən	ma	ʔʌn	ja.pʰaj	lʌh	pɛh	gar	hɔm	ple
GEN-everytime	mother	3S	ogress	go to	pick up	3D	eat(rice)	fruit
conn-cl	APP			VP				n
<link>	SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.				COMPLE.

'positive generalized situation' part
Whenever his mother, the ogress, went to pick fruit for them to eat,

စံမ်	တံမ်	အှၣ်	ပဲတ်	အၣ်နၢ	တွ့ၣ်	ဆဝီ	ယၢ့်
cəm	təm	ʔun	pɛt	ʔʌn	twən	sa·ŋi	jʌʔ
GEN	instruct	FIX	DONE OFF	3S	every	UNIT(time,day)	SURE
conn-cl	VP			prn-per	QP		prt-mood
<link>	PREDICATE C.			COMPLE.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		cs-mood

'fact' part
she instructed him every day.

M27-3.2

အယ်	စံမ်	လ်း	စံမ်	ဟဘ့်
ʔɛ	cəm	lʌh	cəm	hʌʔ
1P (incl.)	GEN	move to (go)	GEN	move up
prn-per	conn-cl	vdir	conn-cl	vdir
SUBJECT	<link>	PRED. C.	<link>	PRED. C.

'fact' part
However, we will go up

မော	အယ်	ပေါ	မော	အယ်	ရောတ်
mɔ	ʔɛ	pɔ	mɔ	ʔɛ	rɔt
GEN-until	1P (incl.)	arrive	GEN-until	1P (inclusive)	reach
conn-cl	prn-per	vi	conn-cl	prn-per	vi
<link>	SUBJECT	PRED. C.	<link>	SUBJECT	PRED. C.

'negative generalized situation' part
until we arrive there.

7.2.9. Progressive (PROG) Sentence

GP (SL) has two types of progressive sentences. Both of them have two parts, of which the second part expressing an idea which goes a step further or has a higher degree than the idea in the first part. Usually, a progressive sentence is made up of two clauses, one for each part.

7.2.9.1. Scope Progressive Sentence

A scope progressive sentence has its second part expressing an idea which goes a step further than the idea in the first part. There is a scope progressive connectives, ဆဲ့း /sɛh/. ဆဲ့း /sɛh/ is used to mark the first part, sitting before the SUBJECT in the clause. It is used in pair with scope adverbs ဘ့ၣ်ဝံ် /bɤ/ 'still' or ထဲၣ် /tʰɛŋ/ 'also,' which marks the second part. ဆဲ့း /sɛh/ cannot be used on its own but always in pair with ဘ့ၣ်ဝံ် /bɤ/ or ထဲၣ် /tʰɛŋ/, but it can be omitted when ဘ့ၣ်ဝံ် /bɤ/ or ထဲၣ် /tʰɛŋ/ marks the progress. Here is an example.

AbR5.13-14

ဆဲး	ဒဲး	ဂဲ	ဘော	အဲင်
sɛh	dɛh	gɛ	bɔ	ʔɛŋ
PROG-besides	IMPER	3P	carry	glazed earthen jar
conn-cl	vt	prn-per	vt	n
<link>	PRED. C.	COMPLE./SUBJ.	PRED. C.	COMPLEMENT

part 1

Besides asking them to carry glazed earthen jars, he tied stone at them.

တု	ဘြို့ဝ်	မို	တ	ဂဲ
tu·	bɤ	mo	ta·	gɛ
tie	PROG-also	stone	DIR	3P
vt	adv-scope	n	RNP	
PRED. C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLE	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

part 2

Besides asking them to carry glazed earthen jars, he tied stone at them.

It is noteworthy that the number of clauses for the first part and the second part is not restricted to one for each part. There can be more than one clause for the second part, showing the progressive connective standing in the first clause of that part. Here is an example.

WSR19.5-6

အꩦန်	နဲပ်	ပွုတ်	မာ	ဒေ	မ္ꩧ်း	ယာဖည်
ʔʌn	nəp	pwət	ma	de	mɤh	ja.pʰaj
3S	know	DONE	mother	SELF	be	ogress
prn-per	VP		Cl			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT			

Cl.1

He knew right away that his mother was an ogress.

အꩦန်	တီပ်	ထဲင်	ဒေ	မေန်	ကုိရꩦပိုည်	ဒီန်
ʔʌn	tip	tʰɛŋ	de	men	kɯr.pɤj	din
3S	seek	PROG-also	SELF	look	roof	that
prn-per	vt	adv-scope	VP		NP	
SUBJ.	PRED. C.	POST-C. MOD.	POST-C. MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

Cl.2

He also searched upstair

ယ္ꩧ်ဝ်	ပွုတ်	ဆဒေါ	ယာဖည်
jɤ	pwət	sa·dɔ	ja.pʰaj
find	DONE	jacket	ogress
VP		NP	
PREDICATE. C.		COMPLEMENT	

Cl.3

and found ogres' jacket upstair.

Sometimes, ဆဲး /sɛh/ takes the demonstrative ဒီန် /din/ 'that' to form a progressive connective compound ဆဲးဒီန် /sɛh.din/[49]. It is put before the SUBJECT in the last clause of a progressive sentence, concluding the first part and marking the last action or idea. In this case, ထဲင် /tʰɛŋ/ is used in the second part, in pair with ဆဲးဒီန် /sɛh.din/. Usually, this ဆဲးဒီန်...ထဲင် /sɛh.din...tʰɛŋ/ pairing is used for a long progressive sentence, the first part of which consists of more than one clause. Here is an example.

---

[49] The connective ဆဲးဒီန် /sɛh.din/ can be used also to connect a larger grammatical unit, like paragraph.

WS 53.2-6

ဒဲ့	မိ	ဒို့ည်	ခြိရ်
dɛh	mi	dɤj	kʰrir
IMPER	2S	bring	gold

① vt | prn-per | vt | n
② PRED. C. | COMPL./SUBJ. | PRED. C. | COMPLEMENT
③ Cl.1
④ part 1

go hire and bring pony carts

မိ	ဇေင်	စင်	ဒေ	ဒို့ည်	ဘြိင်လဲ
mi	veŋ	caŋ	de	dɤj	brəŋ.lɛ
2S	back (go/come)	hire	SELF	bring	horse cart

① prn-per | VP | | | | n
② SUBJ. | PREDICATE C. | | | | COMPLEMENT
③ Cl.2
④ part 1 (cont')

go hire and bring pony carts

တ	တာဆထေ	ကာဗီလ	အုံန်	ဝ့ည်	လုံပ်	ဇံန်အော့	ကုံန်ဒီ	ကုင်
ta·	ta.sa·tʰe	ka·vi·la·	ʔʌn	gwa·j	lʌp	ven.ʔɔʔ	kʌn.di	ku·ŋ
DIR	rich man	Kavila	Emb-SUBJ	stay	side	east	middle	town

① RNP
② CLAUSE MODIFIER
③ Cl.2 (cont')
④ part 1 (cont')

at the rich old man Kavila who lives in the east part of the town center

တာင်	ဆဲင်ခြိရ်	အာည်	ခို့ရ်	အုံန်	ယို့ဝ်	ဒေ	ဘြိင်လဲ	ဘွံမ်	ဒိုရ်	ဘီ
taŋ	sɛŋ·kʰrir	ʔaj	kʰɤj	ʔʌn	jɤ	de	brəŋ.lɛ	bləm	dor	bi
carry	treasure	1D (incl.)	CAUSE	3S	possess	SELF	horse cart	many	...than	people

① vt | NP | | conn-cl | prn-per | vt | prn-refl | NP
② PRED. C. | COMPLEMENT | | <link> | SUBJ. | PRED.C | POST-C. | COMPLEMENT
③ Cl.3 | | | Cl.4
④ part 1 (cont')

to carry our treasure because he has more pony carts than others.

အော	ဒၢ့်	ရဲ့	ဆဲင်	အာည်	ခြိရ်	အာည်	ဟာအိုဝ်
ʔɔ	dʌʔ	rɛʔ	sɛŋ	ʔaj	kʰrir	ʔaj	ha·ʔɯ
1S	REMAIN	watch	gem	1D (incl.)	gold	1D(incl.)	here

① prn-per | VP | | NP | | | | n-spat
② SUBJ. | PRE-C. MODIFIER | | COMPLEMENT | | | | CL. MOD.
③ Cl.5
④ part 1 (cont')

I remain to guard our gems and gold here.

ဆဲးဒိန်	ဇိရ့်	ထဲင်	မိ	ဒို့ည်	အာည်	တာင်	မို့ဝ်	တ	တာဆထေ
sɛh.din	ɟɤɽ	tʰɛŋ	mi	dɤj	ʔaj	taŋ	mɯʔ	ta·	ta.sa·tʰe
PROG-besides that	buy	PROG-also	2S	bring	1D (incl.)	put	ox	DIR	rich man

① conn-cl | vt | adv-scope | VP | | | n | | RNP
② <link> | PRED.C | POST-C. MOD. | POST-C. MODIFIER | | | COMPLE. | | CL.MODIFIER
③ Cl.6
④ part 2

Besides, buy and bring also at the rich man oxen for us to carry (things).

7.2.9.2. Degree Progressive Sentence

A degree progressive sentence has its second part expressing an idea which has a higher degree than the idea in the first part. In forming a degree progressive sentence, the connective ဂိုပ် /gɤp/ is used and put after the SUBJECT of the second clause. Here are two examples.

WSR2-39.4

ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	ကဆေ	ဘီ
kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	ka·se	bi
king	be ashamed	people
n	adj	n
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CL.MODIFIER
part 1		

The king was so ashamed

ငါ်ည်	ဂိုပ်	ခိရိုးရိုး	ပည်	ပင်
ŋaj	gɤp	kʰo.roh.roh	pa·j	pəŋ
face	PROG-even	very red	all	UNIT(round thing)
n	conn-cl	adj	QP	
SUBJ.	<link>	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	
part 2				

that his face even all turned red.

WS32.12

အုံန်	ဟွည်း	ဗျိုတ်	ထီ	ဂဲ
ʔʌn	hwa·jɤ	vjət	tʰi·	gɛ
3S	FINISH,ALREADY	give back	bean	3P
prn-per	VP		NP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	
part 1				

After he gave back their beans

ဂိုပ်	လွုဝ်	ဒေ	အွုန်
gɤp	ḷuw	de	ʔun
PROG-even	excessive	SELF	keep, fix, save
conn-cl	adj	VP	
<link>	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	
part 2			

he even had the extra to keep for himself.

7.2.10. Analogic (ANALOG) Sentence

Analogic sentence is composed of two sentences that the second one shows an analogy or a metaphor to the fact stated in the first one. Analogic connective ခိုည်လာ, /kʰɤj.laɤ/ is employed and put before the SUBJECT of the second clause. Here is an example.

WSR2-38.7

ဆပွိုတ်	ဘောည်	နာင်	ဒိန်	ပုိရပုိရ	ပုိရပုိရ	ကုိရဗွိည်	ဘီ
sa·pwət	bej	naŋ	din	pʌr.pʌr	pʌr.pʌr	kɯr.vɤj	bi
turban	throw	princess	that	levitate	levitate	above, up	people
NP				VP		RNP	
SUBJECT				PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER	
part 1							

The turban which the princess threw flew above the people

ခို့ည်လာ,	အုံန်	လာင်	ဒေ	ရာ့ရ့	ဘူပါန်အောန်	ကျလ	ပူန်	ကွ့န်နာင်	ခုန်ဟော်ခံမ်	ဒီန်
kʰɤj.laˠ	ʔʌn	laŋ	de	raɤ̰	bu.pan.ʔɔn	kjaˑ.laˑ	pun	kwən naŋ	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	din
ANALOG	3S	go around	SELF	choose	spouse	good	for	princess	king	that
conn-cl	prn-per	VP			NP		RNP			
<link>	SUBJ.	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT		CLAUSE MODIFIER			

part 2

as if it went around to choose a good husband for the king's princess

7.2.11. Multi-layer Sentence

GP (SL) can write complex sentence having two or more layers. This is called multi-layer sentence or sentence-in-sentence embedding.[50] It is noteworthy that usually no two immediate layers are of the same type. Otherwise, there will be confusion of the relationship among the parts of each layer. Here are two examples. The first one is two-layer; the second one is three-layer.

M44-16.3	ဘ့ို့ည်		ကာ	နံပ်	တဲ့မ်	ဘ့ို့ည်		ကာ	ပဲန်	ြ္ဂဲည်
	bɤj		ka	nəp	tɛm	bɤj		ka	pɛn	graˑj
	CONCS-even.though		NEG	able	write	CONCS-even.though		NEG	become	tell
	conn-cl		Cl.1			conn-cl		Cl.2		
	coordinative sent-part 1					coordinative sent-part 2				

hypothetical concessive sent-part 1

Even though you cannot write and you won't tell

ပ့ုန်	အုင်	ပ့ုန်	လ့ို	မီ
pʌn	ʔuˑŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb-OBJ	like, love	Emb- OBJ	wish	2S
Cl.2 (cont')				
coordinative sent-part 2 (cont')				

hypothetical concessive sent-part 1 (cont')

what you love and wish,

မီ	ကုံ့န်	နံပ်	ဒါ့	အော	အုင်	ည့ို့	မီ	ဒီန်	မှာ့န်	မီ	ကုံရ်ဇေ	ဘ့ို့ဝ်		အော	စ္ဟ
mi	kʌn	nəp	dahʔ	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɲoh	mi	din	man	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ		ʔɔ	ciˑ
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that	beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)		1S	POLITE
Cl.3	conn-cl	Cl.3 (cont')							Cl.4						
specified conditional sent-part 1									specified conditional sent-part 2						

hypothetical concessive sent-part 2

if only you can say 'I really love you,' I beg that you still pity me please.

WSR 6.4-7	ကောပ်	ကုံတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ည_ာ ခုံည် ဒီန်	မ့ိဝ့်,	ကွ့န်အီမဲ	ဟ့ဝ်	မ့ိဝ့်,	ကွ့န်အီပ့ုန်	ဟ့ဝ်
	kɔp	kɤt	hɔj.blɔˠ	ɲa.kʰɤj.din	mɤh	kwən.ʔi.mɛ	hɯ	mɤh	kwən.ʔi.pʌn	hɯ
	CAUSE	give birth	white water-snail	like that	be	boy	SELECT	be	girl	SELECT
①	conn-cl	v	n	adv	vlink	n	Q	vlink	n	q
②		Cl.1			Cl.2			Cl.3		
③					selective sent					
④	causative sent-part 1 'Reason'				causative sent-part 2 'Result'					
⑤	chronological sent-part 1									

Because (she) gave birth a White Water-snail like that, whether it is either a boy or a girl,

---

[50] See also section 11.4. Sentence-in-Sentence Embedding.

အပျိုဒေါ	ဂဲ	ကာ	နံပ်	ဒေ	ကုံရုံကား;
ʔaˑpjo.dɔ	gɛ	ka	nəp	de	kʌr.kah
maid-of-honor	3P	NEG (IND)	be able to	SELF	distinguish

① RECAP   prn-per   VP
② Cl.4
③
④ causative sent-part 2 'Result' (cont')
⑤ chronological sent-part 1 (cont')
the maids-of-honor were not able to distinguish,

စီပဲန်	ဂဲ	ဓရုံခြီရ်	မိုဝ်း	ကာ	ဒါ်း
ci.pɛn	gɛ	vər.kʰrir	mɤh	ka	dʌh
CHRON-finally	3P	gold chain	YES-emp	NEG	strike

① conn-cl   prn-per   n   prt-v   neg   vt
② Cl.5
③
④ coordination sent-part 1
⑤ chronological sent-part 2
finally, they strike neither the gold chain or the silver chain.

ဓရုံရ္ရုံန်	မိုဝ်း	ကာ	ဒါ်း	ပဲတ်	ယဢ်
vər.rɤn	mɤh	ka	dʌh	pɛt	jʌʔ
silver chain	YES-emp	NEG	strike	DONE	SURE

① n   prt-v   neg   vt   adv   prt-mood
② Cl.6
③
④ coordination sent-part 2
⑤ chronological sent-part 2 (cont')
finally, they strike neither the gold chain or the silver chain.

8 *Word Structure*

In GP (SL), a word can be illustrated in one of these formulae, summarising its possible elements and configuration.

Noun Word =   P2: noun classifier
    + P1: က /kaˑ/, ဆ /saˑ/, တ /taˑ/, ရ /raˑ/, အ /ʔaˑ/, ကုၚ်/kʌn/, ကုၚ်/kʌr/, ကီုၚ်/kɯr/,
            ဆံၚ်/sʌn/, ပုံၚ်/pʌn/, noun root
    + C^n: noun root

Verb/Adjecive Word =   P1: က /kaˑ/, ဆ /saˑ/, တ /taˑ/, ရ /raˑ/, အ /ʔaˑ/, ကုၚ်/kʌn/, ကုၚ်/kʌr/, ကီုၚ်
/kɯr/,
                 ဆံၚ်/sʌn/, ပုံၚ်/pʌn/, verb root, adjective root
    + C^n: verb root, adjective root

Numeral Compound = P^n: ပါည/paj/, နိၚ်/nəŋ/, ဇူး /ɟuh/
    + C^n: [1. card-coeff + 2. card-place]

    Word is the smallest clause-building unit, which can be used independently and has certain phonetic, semantic, and grammatical functions. In view of structure, there are three kinds of words in GP (SL). They are simple word, derivative, and compound.

8.1. Simple Word

Simple words are words that are formed by one single morpheme.[51] They are monomorphemic. GP (SL) is mainly monosyllabic that most of its morphemes contain only one syllable,[52] such as ညွံမ် /ɲəm/ 'ache,' အီမ်ၚ် /ʔim/ 'alive,' ဟေ /he/ 'plant,' ဒုၚ်ရ် /doɻ/ 'edge.' There are also some bisyllabic and multisyllabic simple words containing two or more syllables, for example, လံၚ်ကံၚ် /ləŋ.kəŋ/ 'log,' ကုၚ်ပ်ကုၚ်ပ် /kʌp.kʌp/ 'turtle' (reduplication), ဆွံၚ်ဘြွံၚ် /swəŋ.brwəŋ/[53] 'retrogress' (rhyme[54]), အောပ်အောပ် /ʔɔp.ʔɔp/ (reduplication, describing 'small'), ဇိန်ဇိန် /ɹin.ɹin/ (onomatopoeic word, describing the sound from vehicle), etc. Simple words also include proper nouns and loan words, which very often are transliteration and not monosyllablic. Here are some examples, ကာၚ်ဟာဝ် /kaŋ.haw/ 'heaven (Shan loan word),' ထိၚ်ဃာဆာမ်ဟောၚ် /tʰiˑŋ.fa.sam.heŋ/ 'great jungle (Shan loan word),' ဆာမ်ဘုတရာ /sam.buˑ.taˑ.ra/ 'ocean (Pali/Burmese loan word).' A morpheme containing five or more syllables is rare in GP (SL). Sometimes, a noun classifier is attached preceedingly to a simple word, for example ဝါၚ်,ရျုံရ် /vaˋ.rjər/ 'earthworm,' and this does not make the resultant wordform a compound or a derivative.

    In GP (SL), it is not unusual to form a word by reduplication of a simple word,[55] for example in formation of adverbs. This kind of reduplication does not create a compound but another simple word.

---

[51] Morpheme, which combines sound/form and meaning, is the smallest meaningful unit in a language.

[52] Syllable is a unit in speech that contains a single vowel sound and is pronounced as a unit.

[53] This is a simple word, not compound, because both part of the word ဆွံၚ် /swəŋ/ and ဘြွံၚ် /brwəŋ/ are meaningless when they separate with each other. That is, they are not free by themselves. They are bounded roots.

[54] Rhyme, or vowel rhyme, is that every syllable in a word, two or more words in a phrase, or the last syllable of two or more lines in a poetry writing ends with the same vowel and/or syllable final.

[55] See also chapter 14. Reduplication.

Usually, the new word resulted has a different word class. For example, လ /laˑ/ 'good' is an adjective. It reduplicates and becomes လလ /laˑ.laˑ/ 'well,' which is an adverb. Both လ /laˑ/ and လလ /laˑ.laˑ/ are considered having simple word structure.

8.2. Derivative

In GP (SL), there are two ways to form a derivative by putting two roots together. The first way is to put together a functional root and a lexical root. The first root is more functional and sometimes a reduced pre-syllable; the second one is more lexical and always a full syllable. The choice for the first root is limited to က /kaˑ/, ဆ /saˑ/, တ /taˑ/, ရ /raˑ/, အ /ʔaˑ/, ကု� /kʌn/, ကုရ /kʌr/, ကိုရ /kɯr/, ဆု� /sʌn/, ပု� /pʌn/, while that for the second root is more flexible.

In view of semantics, there are two main types of derivatives in GP (SL). For one type, the meaning of derivative is new and completely unrelated to that of its roots. For another type, the meaning of derivative is the extension of its lexical root by its functional root. Here are some examples.

Derivatives (New Meaning)					
Wordform			Functional R.	Lexical R.	
ကဗဲ့ /kaˑvɛʔ/	vt	'play'	က /kaˑ/	ဗဲ့ /vɛʔ/ — n	'belly'
ကညောမ် /kaˑɲɔm/	n	'child, youth'	က /kaˑ/	ညောမ် /ɲɔm/ — vt	'dye'
ဆဂေ /saˑge/	vt	'abuse, ill treat'	ဆ /saˑ/	ဂေ /ge/ — n	'pine'
ဆဂုရ် /saˑgʌr/	n	'boundary'	ဆ /saˑ/	ဂုရ် /gʌr/ — vt	'play (musical instrument)'
တခိုည် /taˑkʰɤj/	adj	'pleasant'	တ /taˑ/	ခိုည် /kʰɤj/ — vt	'be like'
တဇုမ် /taˑɹom/	n	'mosquito'	တ /taˑ/	ဇုမ် /ɹom/ — vt	'draw out'
ရငါ /raˑŋa/	n	'sesame'	ရ /raˑ/	ငါ /ŋa/ — adj	'clear'
ရပျာ /raˑpja/	n	'young unmarried woman'	ရ /raˑ/	ပျာ /pja/ — n	'parasite'
အဂ္လျည် /ʔaˑglaj/	n	'little squirrel'	အ /ʔaˑ/	ဂ္လျည် /glaj/ — vt	'expose'
ကု�ဘ္ရုး /kʌn.bruh/	vi	'growl'	ကု� /kʌn/	ဘ္ရုး /bruh/ — vt	'stab'
ကိုရဆီ /kɯr.si/	n	'lemon'	ကိုရ /kɯr/	ဆီ /si/ — n	'louse'

Derivatives (Extended Meaning)					
Wordform			Functional R.	Lexical R.	
ကဆိုး /kaˑsih/	vi	'crack'	က /kaˑ/	ဆိုး /sih/ — vt	'scratch'
ဆကုပ် /saˑkup/	vt	'place sth. face down'	ဆ /saˑ/	ကုပ် /kup/ — vi	'bow'
ဆလော, /saˑlɔɣ/	n	'cup, plate'	ဆ /saˑ/	လော, /lɔɣ/ — n	'valley'

Wordform			Functional R.	Lexical R.		
Derivatives (Extended Meaning)						
တကား /taˑkah/	n	'fork (in path)'	တ /taˑ/	ကား /kah/	vt	'untie, break off'
တပြော /taˑprɔ/	n	'side of sth.'	တ /taˑ/	ပြော /prɔ/	n-ref	'beside'
ရခဲ /raˑkʰrɛ/	n	'thing used for protection'	ရ /raˑ/	ခဲ /kʰrɛ/	vt	'protect'
ရဝ္ည /raˑgwaˑj/	n	'dwelling place'	ရ /raˑ/	ဝ္ည /gwaˑj/	vi	'dwell'
ရဒေင် /raˑdeŋ/	n	'journey, method'	ရ /raˑ/	ဒေင် /deŋ/	n	'road, path'
ရဟို /raˑho/	vt	'show'	ရ /raˑ/	ဟို /ho/	n	'leader'
အကို /ʔaˑkɤ/	ntemp	'day after tomorrow'	အ /ʔaˑ/	ကို /kɤ/	vi	'hope for'
အဆေ /ʔaˑse/	interrog	'who?'	အ /ʔaˑ/	ဆေ /se/	interrog	'what?'
ကုန်ဇင် /kʌn.ɹəŋ/	vt	'set up'	ကုန် /kʌn/	ဇင် /ɹəŋ/	vi	'stand'
ကုန်ဇ္တ် /kʌn.ɹwət/	meas-ind	'UNIT(drop)'	ကုန် /kʌn/	ဇ္တ် /ɹwət/	v	'drip'
ကုန်ဟဲး /kʌn.hɛh/	vi	'(horse) neigh'	ကုန် /kʌn/	ဟဲး /hɛh/	omon	horse's neigh
ကုရဆဲး /kʌr.sɛh/	vt	'tear'	ကုရ /kʌr/	ဆဲး /sɛh/	vt	'pare'
ကုရနေရ /kʌr.ner/	vi	'similar to each other'	ကုရ /kʌr/	နေရ /ner/	vi	'similar'
ကုရဗျရ /kʌr.vjər/	n	'surrounding'	ကုရ /kʌr/	ဗျရ /vjər/	vi	'go around, detour'
ကုရဆိုပ် /kʌr.sɯp/	vt	'join sth. together'	ကုရ /kʌr/	ဆိုပ် /sɯp/	adj	'succeeding'
ကုရပန် /kʌr.pən/	vi	'rotate'	ကုရ /kʌr/	ပန် /pən/	vt	'move around sth.'
ဆုန်ဇမ် /sʌn.ɹrm/	meas-ind	'UNIT(a fistful of)'	ဆုန် /sʌn/	ဇမ် /ɹrm/	vt	'draw out'
ပုန်ကို္တ် /pʌn.kwət/	vt	'load'	ပုန် /pʌn/	ကို္တ် /kwət/	n	'load, burden'
ပုန်ဟ္ည /pʌn.hwaˑjɤ/	vt	'make sth. to an end'	ပုန် /pʌn/	ဟ္ည /hwaˑjɤ/	vi	'be finished'
ပုန်ဒါင် /pʌn.daŋ/	vt	'make sth. great'	ပုန် /pʌn/	ဒါင် /daŋ/	adj	'great'
ပုန်ပြိုး /pʌn.proh/	n	'announcement'	ပုန် /pʌn/	ပြိုး /proh/	vt	'announce'
ပုန်လား /pʌn.lʌh/	n	'things for going'	ပုန် /pʌn/	လား /lʌh/	vdir	'go up'

It is noteworthy that the functional roots ကုံရ် /kʌr/, ဆုံန် /sʌn/ and ပုံန် /pʌn/ always extend the meaning of their following roots and never create new meaning from them in forming derivatives. ပုံန် /pʌn/ is quite productive. It can attach to a simple word, a derivative, a compound, a phrase, and an embedded clause.[56] It forms a new transitive verb by extending the meaning of a noun, an adjective, or an intransitive verb with 'to make something happen,' that is, acting as a causative. For instance, ခါ /kʰɔ/ 'hard;' ပုံန်ခါ /pʌn.kʰɔ/ 'harden (make something hard).' It also forms a new noun by extending the meaning of a transitive verb or a directive verb with 'something good for' or 'thing to/of/for.' For instance, ကဲ /ka·vɛʔ/ means 'play;' ပုံန်ကဲ /pʌn.ka·vɛʔ/ means 'game (something good for playing).' When ပုံန် /pʌn/ merges to a morpheme without consonant onset but having only a rhyme or a semi-vowel initial, it reduces to ပ /p/. For example, ယဲမ် /jəm/ means 'die;' ပျုမ် /pjəm/ (/p/ + /jəm/) means 'kill (to make someone die).'

ကုံရ် /kʌr/ can extend the meaning of its following morphemes in more than one way. The most productive way is to add reciprocity to a transitive verb to form an intransitive verb. For instance, ရက် /rək/ means 'love (someone);' ကုံရ်ရက် / kʌr.rək / means 'love each other.' Besides, ကုံရ် /kʌr/ can turn a verb to a noun without altering its primary meaning. For instance, စု /cu·/ means 'meet;' ကုံရ်စု /kʌr.cu·/ means 'meeting' and 'meet together.'

The second way to form a derivative is putting two non-reduced, non-functional roots together, between which there is no structural relationship[57] and at least one of which is unbounded. The resultant derivative has a new, unrelated meaning with its roots. It is often that one of the roots has undefined meaning or may be bounded. Sometimes, the second root is added for rhyme or alliteration to make a word sound poetic. Here are some examples.

Derivatives (Without Structural Relationship)								
Wordform			Root 1			Root 2		
တုံင်ဂ /tɯɯŋ. ga·/	n	'chin, jaw'	တုံင် /tɯɯŋ/	n	'pole'	ဂ /ga·/	vt	'bite'
ပုံရ်ကီတ် /pʌr.kit/	n	'red ant'	ပုံရ် /pʌr/	vi	'fly'	ကီတ် /kit/	vt	'gather (things)'
ချုင်ချဲင် /cʰu·ŋ.cʰən/	n	'amulet'	ချုင် /cʰu·ŋ/	n	'sour sauce'	ချဲင် /cʰən/	n	'bed'
အိပြ /ʔi.grɛ/	n	'crocodile'	အိ /ʔi/	n	'person/thing'	ပြ /grɛ/	***	***

Here is an illustration of possible derivative structures.

Table 19: Structure of GP (SL) Derivative

	CENTRAL		
	n root, v root, adj root	n root, v root, adj root	new meaning
က /kaˑ/, ဆ /saˑ/, တ /taˑ/, ရ /raˑ/, အ /ʔaˑ/, ကုၢ်န် /kʌn/, ကုၢ်ရ် /kɯr/			
Causative, Reciprocal, Instrumental, Nominalize, etc.	n root, v root, adj root		extended meaning
က /kaˑ/, ဆ /saˑ/, တ /taˑ/, ရ /raˑ/, အ /ʔaˑ/, ကုၢ်န် /kʌn/, ကုၢ်ရ် /kʌr/, ဆုၢ်န် /sʌn/, ပုၢ်န် /pʌn/			

Sometimes, a noun classifier is attached preceedingly to a derivative, for example ယၢကမၢည် /**ja**.kaˑmaj/ 'widow,' and this does not make the resultant wordform a compound. Theoretically, all derivatives are free form that can function by themselves. However, GP (SL) favours flexibility in joining two derivatives, a derviative and a simple word, or two simple words to form a bigger word, that is, a compound. Derivative is somehow in between simple word and compound. Here is a list of contrastive feature of derivative with simple word and compound.

Table 20: Derivative Contrastive Feature with Simple Word and Compound in GP (SL)

Derivative	Simple Word	Compound
More than one root	One single morpheme	More than one root
Possibly unbounded root	No unbounded part	
Possibly bounded root		No bounded roots
Without structural relationship between roots		With structural relationship between roots

8.3. *Compound*

Compounds are words that are formed by simple words, including loan words, and derivatives[58] with certain in-between structural relationship. The combination can be two simple words, one simple word and one derivative, or two derivatives, for instance, ကၢး-ဘ့ /kaḫbu/ 'be weaned' (simple word and simple word), ဖိုမ်-ကုၢ်ရ်ဖိရ် /pʰɤm̥kʌr.fʌr/ 'troubled' (simple word and derivative), ကုၢ်ရ်လၢ-ကၢ /kʌr.lḁka/ 'gill' (derivative and simple word), and ကုၢ်န်အုၢ်ရ်-ဆၢဂုၢ်ရ် /kʌn.ʔuɾsaˑgʌr/ 'boundary' (derivative and derivative). Sometimes, a noun classifier is attached preceedingly to a compound, for example ခါ,ကောင်ဆတၢ /va˥.kɔŋ.saˑta/ 'scorpion,' and this does not make the resultant wordform a phrase.

In view of the emic structural relationship between the two parts in a compound, there are five kinds of compounds in GP (SL), that is, coordination, head-modifier, supplement-main, verb-object, and subject-predicate.[59]

---

[58] Theoretically, single morphemes can join together to make bigger words than simple words. The morphemes which are used to form 'big' words are called roots. The 'big' words formed are called stem. There are two kinds of stems, namely, compound stem and derived stem. In inflecting languages, stems can be further inflected by adding inflectional affixes to refine without changing the basic meaning and word class. In this grammar, because GP (SL) is isolating rather than inflecting, there is almost no inflection in the language. In order to keep the presentation plain and simple, the fine distinction between terminology of 'root' and 'stem' is disregarded.

[59] In other languages, a compound may or may not have the same or related meaning as the usual meaning of its roots. However, in GP (SL), if the roots do not have certain relationship, the combination of roots is

8.3.1. Coordination (COOR) Compound

COOR compounds are compounds whose parts are put side by side on an equal ranking. The parts are of the same word class (part of speech)[60] but the resultant compound is not necessarily the same as its parts, though almost always it is. The parts can be synonymic, antonymic, or neither synonymic or antonymic. Here is a list of examples of COOR compounds composed of two roots.

General COOR Compounds								
Compound			Root 1			Root 2		
ဆူရာ /su.ra/	n-coll	'descendent'	ဆူ /su/	n	'grandchild'	ရာ /ra/	n	'great-grandchild'
ကိုရ်ညာပိုရ်မာင် /kuur.ɲa.pʌr.maŋ/	n	'chief the lord'	ကိုရ်ညာ /kuur.ɲa/	n	'lord'	ပိုရ်မာင် /pʌr.maŋ/	n	'chief'
ရာႇကုႃန်ရာႇမာ /raɣ.kun.raɣ.ma/	n	'orphan'	ရာႇကုႃန် /raɣ.kun/	***	'no father'	ရာႇမာ /raɣ.ma/	***	'no mother'
တိုႂပိုည်တိုႂပါည် /to.poj.to.paj/	adj	'naked'	တိုႂပိုည် /to.poj/	***	'body-tender'	တိုႂပါည် /to.paj/	***	'body-wash'

Synonymic COOR Compounds								
Compound			Root 1			Root 2		
ကဒည်ကဲႇရဲႇ /ka·da·jʔ.kɛɣ.rɛɣ/	n	'insult'	ကဒည် /ka·da·jʔ/	n	'insult'	ကဲႇရဲႇ /kɛɣ.rɛɣ/	n	'insult' (Burmese)
ကိုရ်အုင်ကိုရ်ရက် /kʌr.ʔuˑŋ.kʌr.rək/	vi	'like each other'	ကိုရ်အုင် /kʌr.ʔuˑŋ/	vi	'like each other'	ကိုရ်ရက် /kʌr.rək/	vi	'love each other'
ကံတ်ငၚ် /kət.ŋəŋ/	adj	'cold'	ကံတ် /kət/	adj	'cold (person)'	ငၚ် /ŋəŋ/	adj	'cold (thing)'
ယူႂးယူႂးယ်ရ်ယ်ရ်[61] /juh.juh.jʌr.jʌr/	adj	'trembling'	ယူႂး /juh/	vt	'shake'	ယ်ရ် /jʌr/	vi	'shiver'

Antonymic COOR Compounds								
Compound			Root 1			Root 2		
ကင်ကဲႇ /kəŋ.kɛh/	n	'elbow'	ကင် /kəŋ/	vt	'hold'	ကဲႇ /kɛh/	vt	'keep off'
လာင်ဟာႇလာင်လေႂး /laŋ.hʌʔ.laŋ.leh/	v	'wander'	လာင်ဟာႇ /laŋ.hʌʔ/	vi	'go around up'	လာင်လေႂး /laŋ.leh/	vi	'go around down'
ပြည်လှုတ်ပြည်လ /gra·j.lut.gra·j.la·/	v	'slander, gossip'	ပြည်လှုတ် /gra·j.lut/	vi	'tell-bad'	ပြည်လ /gra·j.la·/	vi	'tell-good'
ကံတ်ကံတ်မည်မည် /kət.kət.ma·j.ma·j/	adj	'fever'	ကံတ် /kət/	adj	'cold (per.) '	မည် /ma·j/	adj	'hot (per.) '

There are also synonymic COOR compounds composed of more than two roots. Here is an example of having three roots.

Synonymic COOR Compounds (Multi-root)											
Compound		Root 1			Root 2			Root 3		
ရ်ှိန်ခြိရ်ဆဲင် /rɤn.kʰrir.sɛŋ/	n	'treasure'	ရ်ှိန် /rɤn/	n	'silver'	ခြိရ် /kʰrir/	n	'gold'	ဆဲင် /sɛŋ/	n	'gem'

---

considered a derivative rather than a compound. That is, it is the emic relationship between parts which defines it a compound.

[60] See section 9. Word Class.

[61] This word is reduplication and alliteration, that every syllable in a word or two or more words in a phrase or a clause begins with the same consonant.

Even though the meaning of a compound is not necessary the total sum of its parts, obviously, GP (SL) COOR compounds have their meaning from the combination of parts in several ways. One way is to join together specific items to form a generic term; one is to join words of 'parts' to form a new word expressing the 'whole;' one is to join antonyms to form a comprehensive term; one is to join two synonyms in GP (SL) or one in GP (SL) and one loan word to form a new synonym with a more intensive sense.

Besides, there is a way to form a ***super-compound*** by combining two pseudo-compounds. Consider the adjective တိုပိုည်တိုပါည် /to.poj.to.paj/ 'naked' among the examples. It is formed by တိုပိုည် /to.poj/ and တိုပါည် /to.paj/, having their literal meaning as 'body-tender' and 'body-wash.' These two parts look like compounds with HM structure but neither of them is used independently as a compound that they are pseudo-compounds. The meaning of the resultant form is just somehow related to these two parts that it is a compound and not a phrase. Again, consider the noun ရာ့ကွန်ရာ့မာ /raˋ.kun.raˋ.ma/ 'orphan,' which is composed of ရာ့ကွန် /raˋ.kun/ 'no father' and ရာ့မာ /raˋ.ma/ 'no mother.' However, these two pseudo-compounds cannot be used on their own that what they come together and form is not a phrase but a compound.[62] Very often, GP (SL) COOR compounds have poetic features such as reduplication, alliteration, rhyme, etc.[63] For example, တိုပိုည်တိုပါည် /to.poj.to.paj/ 'naked' has a reduplication pattern of ABAC and is alliteration.

8.3.2. Head-Modifier (HM) Compound

HM compounds are compounds whose parts are in head-modifier relationship. The first part is head which is modified or determined by the second part, modifier. Usually, the word class of the resultant compound is the same as that of the head. Here are some examples.

HM Compounds								
Compound			Head			Modifier		
ကဆိင်တီ /ka·sən.ti/	n	'knuckle'	ကဆိင် /ka·sən/	n	'joint'	တီ /ti/	n	'hand'
ကွန်အာင်ကာ /kʌn.ʔaŋ.ka/	n	'fish bone'	ကွန်အာင် /kʌn.ʔaŋ/	n	'bone'	ကာ /ka/	n	'fish'
ရိင်ဖည် /rɛŋ.pʰaj/	n	'speed'	ရိင် /rɛŋ/	n	'power'	ဖည် /pʰaj/	adj	'fast'
လာ့ရာ့ /laˋ.rah/	n	'rice scoop'	လာ့ /laˋ/	n	'spoon'	ရာ့ /rah/	vt	'stir (rice)'
လွိင်ဘြီ[64] /lwəŋ.bri/	vt	'hunt'	လွိင် /lwəŋ/	vi	'visit'	ဘြီ /bri/	n	'forest'
မာ့ပိရဲဒပ /mʌʔ.pʌr.dʌp/	vi	'kneelingly sit'	မာ့ /mʌʔ/	vi	'sit'	ပိရဲဒပ /pʌr.dʌp/	vi	'kneel'
ခိရဲ့ရဲ့ /kʰo.roh.roh/	adj	'very red'	ခိ /kʰo/	adj	'red'	ရဲ့ရဲ့ /roh.roh/	adv	'very (red)'

8.3.3. Supplement-Main (SM) Compound

SM compounds are compounds whose parts are in supplement-main relationship. The first part supplies more information to explain the second part, including kind, reason, degree, spatial or temporal location , negation, etc. Usually, the word class of the resultant compound is the same as that of the second part. Here are some examples.

---

[62] See also section 10.3. Contrast between Word and Phrase.
[63] See also chapter 14. Reduplication.
[64] This is not an example of VO compound because the first part လွိင် /lwəŋ/'visit' is not a transitive verb.

SM Compounds

Compound			Supplement			Main		
အိမ်ဘိုင် /ʔom.bɯɯŋ/	n	'well'	အိမ် /ʔom/	n	'water'	ဘိုင် /bɯɯŋ/	n	'hole'
လော,အိမ် /lɔɣ.ʔom/	n	'stream'	လော,/lɔɣ/	n	'valley'	အိမ် /ʔom/	n	'water'
ဗိရ်ည /vir.ɲa/	vt	'take revenge'	ဗိရ်/vir/	vdir.	'return'	ည /ɲa/	vt	'do'
ကာကျ /ka.kjaˑ/	adj	'bad'	ကာ /ka/	neg.	NEG	ကျ /kjaˑ/	adj	'good'
ဆမာယော /saˑma.jɔ/	adj	'coward'	ဆမာ /saˑma/	aux.	'prone to'	ယော /jɔ/	adj	'fear'

8.3.4. Verb-Object (VO) Compound

VO compounds are compounds whose parts are in verb-object relationship. The first part is a transitive verb and the second part is its object. Usually, the word class of the resultant compound is a kind of verbal forms. For example,

VO Compounds

Compound			Verb			Object		
ကားဘု /kah.bu/	vi	'be weaned'	ကား /kah/	vt	'untie, break off from'	ဘု /bu/	n	'breast'
လေးဒေင် /leh.deŋ/	vi	'travel'	လေး /leh/	vdir.	'move down, move out'	ဒေင် /deŋ/	n	'road'
ဟွည်,ရမာ /hwaˑjɣ.raˑma/	vi	'get married'	ဟွည်, /hwaˑjɣ/	vt	'finish'	ရမာ /raˑma/	n	'family'
ဟောမ်ကုင် /hɔm.kuŋ/	vi	'govern'	ဟောမ် /hɔm/	vt	'eat'	ကုင် /kuŋ/	n	'country'
ကုန်ဘြာန်အိမ် /kʌn.bran.ʔom/	adj	'thirsty'	ကုန်ဘြာန် /kʌn.bran/	vt	'hungry for'	အိမ် /ʔom/	n	'water'

The meaning of a VO compound is resulted from blending the literal meaning of its parts Hence, a VO compound as a whole fills the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL rather than the first part in PREDICATE CENTRAL and the second part in COMPLEMENT. This is how a VO compound functions differently from a VO structure filling the PREDICATE in a clause.

8.3.5. Subject-Predicate (SP) Compound

SP compounds are compounds whose parts are in subject-predicate relationship. The first part is the subject and the second part is its predicate. Usually, the word class of the resultant compound is a kind of verbal form. For example,

SP Compounds

Compound			Subject			Predicate		
ကဆိရ်းတဲး /kaˑsɔr.tɛh/	vi	'thunder'	ကဆိရ်း /kaˑsɔr/	n	'thunder'	တဲး /tɛh/	vi	'be broken, disperse'
ဇုင်ဆဲ့ /ɟuŋ.sɛʔ/	vt	'be eroded by rain'	ဇုင် /ɟuŋ/	n	'rain'	ဆဲ့ /sɛʔ/	vt	'instigate'
ငည်အဲပ /ŋaj.ʔəp/	adj	'blind'	ငည် /ŋaj/	n	'eye'	အဲပ /ʔəp/	adj	'dark'
နှိရ်းဟ /nwɔr.haˑ/	adj	'worry'	နှိရ်း /nwɔr/	n	'heart'	ဟ /haˑ/	adj	'anxious'

Like VO compounds, a SP compound has meaning resulted from blending the literal meaning of its parts that it fills the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL in a clause. That is, the 'subject' part of a

compound does not fill the position of SUBJECT in a clause and is not equal to the subject of the clause. Consider the adjective နှံရ်းဟ /nwəɹ.ha·/ 'worry' which is a SP compound and fills PREDICATE CENTRAL in this example.

M27-2.6	ဂဲ	မ့ၣ်	ဒၢ်	နှံရ်းဟ	ပဲတ်	တ	ကညောမ်	ဂဲ
	gɛ	mʌn	dʌʔ	nwəɹ.ha·	pɛt	ta·	ka·ɲɔm	gɛ
	3P	oneself	REMAIN	worry	DONE AWAY	DIR	child, youth	3P
	NP		aux-asp	adj	adv-mann		RNP	
	SUBJECT		PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

They themselves worried the children.

8.3.6. Numeral Compound

Numeral compounds have a special structure that is different from coordination, head-modifier, supplement-main, verb-object, and subject-predicate. There are two kinds of numeral compound, cardinal compound and ordinal compound. The meaning, or value, of a ***cardinal compound*** is the summation of its parts, each of which consists of coefficient and place.[65] For instance, in the numeral compound အာရ်ကိုရ်ပုရ် /ʔar.kɤr.pur/ 'twenty-seven,' အာရ် /ʔar/ 'two' and ပုရ် /pur/ 'seven' are coefficient and ကိုရ် /kɤr/ 'ten' is place, with the unit's place unmarked. အာရ်ကိုရ်ပုရ် /ʔar.kɤr.pur/ reads 'two-ten-seven.' အာရ်ကိုရ် /ʔar.kɤr/ 'two-ten' is twenty. Summation of twenty and seven gives twenty-seven.

Here is an example of large number. 'Twenty-three thousand, six hundred and eighty-nine (23,689)' says in GP (SL) အာရ်**မ့ုန်**ပါည်အ္ဝ္ဟဲည်ထြဲင်တော်ရ်ပိုရ်ယာ**း**တာကိုရ်နှံင်တိမ် /ʔar.**mun**.pa**j**.ʔwa·j.**hrɛŋ**. tɔr.**pʌr.jah**.ta.**kɤr**.nən.tim/ (with places bold). It is noteworthy that there are two linking particles (double-underlined in the example) in large numbers. One is ပါည် /paj/, linking the first two places. It is optionally used for all numbers having five or more places. Another one is နှံင် /nəŋ/, linking the last two non-blank places.[66] It is obligatorily used for numbers having three or more places. For instance, 'three hundred and forty-five (345)' in GP (SL) is အ္ဝ္ဟဲည်**ပိုရ်ယာ်း**ဖိုန်**ကိုရ်နှံင်**ဖ္ဟုန် /ʔwa·j.**pʌr.jʌh**.pʰon.**kɤr**.nən. pʰən/. 'Forty-five (45)' in GP (SL) is ဖိုန်**ကိုရ်**ဖ္ဟုန် /pʰon.**kɤr**.pʰən/.[67]

As a convention, the coefficient အ္ဝ္ /ʔu/ 'one' is dropped before the ten's place when the unit place is non-blank, that is from 'eleven' to 'nineteen.' Two or three consecutive numerals can be put side by side to show a rough figure. For example, အာရ်အ္ဝ္ဟဲည် /ʔar.ʔwa·j/ 'two or three,' တော်ရ်ပုရ်တာ /tɔr.pur.ta/ 'six, seven or eight,' etc. However, it is more proper to repeat the measure after each number, for instant, အ္ဝ္ဟဲည်**ဆင်**ဖိုန်**ဆင်** /ʔwa·j.**sa·ŋi**.pʰon.**sa·ŋi**/ (with measure bold) 'three or four days.'

Ordinal compound GP (SL) forms ordinal by attaching ဇ္ဟု /ɟuh/, which primarily means 'start to, begin to' to cardinal. For example, ဇ္ဟု;အ္ဝ္ /ɟuh.ʔu/ 'first,' ဇ္ဟု;အာရ် /ɟuh.ʔar/ 'second,' ဇ္ဟု;အ္ဝ္ဟဲည် /ɟuh.ʔwa·j/ 'third,' ဇ္ဟု;ဖိုန် /ɟuh.pʰon/ 'fourth,' etc.

---

[65]   For a list of GP (SL) coefficients and places, see the paragraphs about Numerals in section 9.1.7. Quantifier (quan).

[66]   However, in colloquial GP (SL), it is quite often used ပါည် /paj/ instead of နှံင် /nəŋ/ in small number as well.

[67]   Some speakers who may be influenced by English use the same linking particle နှံင် /nəŋ/ in the way as 'and' in English numbers, having it between the last two non-blank places but regardless the unit place. For example, အ္ဝ္ထြဲင်နှံင်ကိုရ်ဖိုန် /ʔu.**rɛŋ**.nən.**kɤr**.pʰon/ 'a thousand and fourteen' and တိမ်ထြဲင်တာပိုရ်ယာ**း**နှံင်အ္ဝ္ဟဲည် ကိုရ်ဖိုန် /tim.**rɛŋ**.ta.**pʌr.jah**.nən.ʔwa·j.**kɤr**.pʰon/ 'nine thousand eight hundred and thirty four'

9 *Word Class*

Word class, also called part of speech, is grammatical classification of words, basically depending on a word's grammatical function with reference to its meaning and form. Grammatical function of a word is its ability to combine with other words, and its position and function in a clause. In GP (SL), words can be grouped into two sets, depending on whether or not a word can serve by itself as a clause constituent,[68] disregarding independent constituent. The two sets of words are content word and function word.

9.1. Content Word
GP (SL) content word can serve as a clause constituent alone and itself has actual meaning, that is lexical meaning. Most of them have a fix relative pitch in articulation, though GP (SL) is not considered tonal. This is an open set that new words can be added to it. Content words include noun, verb, adjective, auxillary verb, adverb, quantifier, measure, demonstrative, pronoun, and interrogative. Adverb, demonstrative, pronoun, and interrogative have less actual meaning than others.

9.1.1. Noun
Nouns are words that refer to people, things, time, place, abstract idea, etc. In view of semantics, there are several kinds of nouns in GP (SL).

Common noun (n) refers to common concepts of things. This kind of nouns is the majority of nouns as well as words. They can be modified by quantifier phrase which is composed by numeral and measure. Some examples of common noun are ကွၣ်ႏ /kwən/ 'child,' မိ့ဝဲ့ /muʔ/ 'ox,' ဂါင် /gaŋ/ 'house,' တိႏဃေ /tuŋ.he/ 'tree,' ဆိုရ် /sor/ 'mountain,' etc. Sometimes, noun classifier and plural marker are attached to a common noun. The order is noun classifier, noun, and then plural marker.[69]

Collective noun (n-coll) refers to collective concepts of things. This kind of nouns may not be modified by quantifier phrase. Some examples of collective noun are ကွိုလာ, /klo.laɤ/ 'cooking utensils,' ရိုန်ခြိရဲဆဲင် /rɤn.kʰrir.sɛŋ/ 'treasure,' etc.

Proper noun (n-prop) refers to individual, unique concepts and cannot be modified by quantifier phrase. Some examples of proper noun are တအာင်း /taˑʔaŋ/ 'Ta'ang,' အိမ်ယဲ့ရ် /ʔom.jʌr/ 'Water-shake,' ဟောည်ႏေဘ္လာ, /hɔj.blɔɤ/ 'White Water-snail,' အဘ္ျုတ် /ʔa.blut/ 'Liar,' စမ်ဘာနဂို /cəm.bi.niˑ.go/ 'Chambanago,[70]' etc. Obviously, GP (SL) use words with lexical meaning to form proper nouns freely, while some proper nouns are just transliteration of loan words.

Abstract noun (n-abstr) refers to concepts of attribution and abstract concept. Some examples of abstract noun are အိပ် /ʔəp/ 'darkness,' ရဲင် /rɛŋ/ 'power,' ဖ္�ို့မ် /pʌm/ 'mind, feeling,' ကောပ် /kɔp/ 'reason,' etc.

Temporal noun (n-temp) refers to time. Some examples of temporal noun are အ္ုဒိန် /ʔu.din/ 'now,' အနှာပ် /ʔaˑŋap/ 'tomorrow,' ရခါရ်း /raˑvar/ 'morning,' etc.

Spatial noun (n-spat) refers to space. Some examples of spatial noun are ဟာအိုဝ် /ha.ʔɯ/ 'here,' ဟာတဉ် /ha.taˑj/ 'over there,' တွံန်တီ /twən.ti/ 'everywhere,' etc.

---

[68] They include main constituents, additional constituents, and special constituents. See section 5. Clause Constituent.
[69] See section 9.2.2.2. Nominal Particle (prt-n).
[70] The last three examples are Shan loan words.

Common nouns and collective nouns make up of the majority; proper nouns, abstract nouns, temporal nouns, and spatial nouns bring special features. Here is a list of grammatical features of noun in GP (SL).

a. It can be put in this frame, except temporal nouns, spatial nouns, and some abstract nouns.

ေဆာ	အိၣ်န်	မှဲဝဲၤ	॥	အိၣ်န်	မှဲဝဲၤ	_____
se	ʔʌn	mɤh		ʔʌn	mɤh	
what?	3S	be		3S	be	
interrog	prn-per	vlink		prn-per	vlink	n
What is it?				It is _____.		

b. It can be modified by quantifier phrase which is composed of a numeral and a measure, except for proper nouns, temporal nouns, spatial nouns, and some abstract nouns. For example,

WS13.2	လိ	အူ	ပျါ,
	li·	ʔu	plaɤ
	writing, letter	one	UNIT(paper, thin flat thing)
	n	card-coeff	meas-ind
		QP	
	a letter		

c. In general, it cannot occur in these contexts.
   i. It cannot follow auxiliary verbs or negator and cannot precede degree adverbs.
   ii.It cannot take an object of a verb.
d. Common nouns, collective nouns, proper nouns, and abstract nouns most often fills the position of SUBJECT and COMPLEMENT, quite often ATTRIBUTIVE, and occasionally RECAP. Temporal nouns and spatial couns can fill the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER by itself. Usually, nouns do not serve as PREDICATE CENTRAL, PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER, or POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER, and does not take COMPLEMENT.

9.1.2. Referential Noun (n-ref)

Referential noun is a special kind of noun. It distributes in a very similar way to how noun does, but it differs from noun by its function and position in a clause,[71] and its nature of not referring to particular item. It mainly refers to locality, proximity, direction, comparison, sequence, etc., which is defined by an external reference point or in a relative sense. It takes a noun, noun phrase, pronoun, quantifier phrase, or embedded clause[72], to which it makes reference to, and forms referential noun phrase that fills CLAUSE MODIFIER in a clause, showing spatial location, temporal location, temporal duration, recipient, audience, beneficiary, accompany, domain, etc. This is a distinctive feature of referential noun from temporal noun and spatial noun, which serve as CLAUSE MODIFIER on their own. Being able to be followed by embedded clause is a distinctive feature of a referential noun from clause connective, which always connects one clause to another. In view of semantics, there are several kinds of referential noun in GP (SL).[73]

Temporal referential noun (n-ref.temp) refers to temporal locality. Some examples of temporal referential noun are ကြဲ||ည် /krɤj/ 'time not yet reaching,' စုန် /cun/ 'time close to,' ကိုၣ်န် /kʌn/ 'at the time of,' ဒၣ်ၣ် /dəŋ/ 'during,' etc.

Spatial referential noun (n-ref.spat) refers to spatial locality. Some examples of spatial referential noun are ကိုၣ်ရ်ဗျိၣ်ရ် /kɯr.vjər/ 'around,' ကိုၣ်န်ဒီ /kʌn.di/ 'between, the middle/centre of,' ရကိုၣ်ရ်ဗိုၣ်ည်

---

[71] For the discussion on its function and position in a clause, see section 10.1.2. Referential Noun Phrase (RNP).
[72] See section 11.1.1.1. Embedded Clause (EmCl).
[73] For examples in usage, see section 5.7. CLAUSE MODIFIER and section 10.1.2. Referential Noun Phrase (RNP).

/raˑkuur.vɤj/ 'the place above,' ရှိဝ် /rɤʔ/ 'outside,' ခုန့် /kʰu.nʌ/ 'inside,' လုပ်ကြမ် /lʌp.krʌm/ 'the side of south,' etc.

Logical referential noun (n-ref.log) refers to logical locality. Some examples of logical referential noun are ပုန့် /pun/ 'for the sake of,' တၚ် /taŋ/ 'on account of,' ကောပ် /kɔp/ 'reason of,' etc.

Proximity referential noun (n-ref.prox) refers to proximity. An example of temporal proximity referential noun is ကုန့် /kʌn/ 'at the time of (near future).' It exclusively takes temporal embedded clause[74] to form referential noun phrase.

Directive referential noun (n-ref.dir) refers to temporal, spatial, or logical direction. Some examples of directive referential noun are တ /taˑ/ 'to, towards,' အိုရ့် /ʔor/ 'since, from' မော /mɔ/ 'till,' etc.

Comparative referential noun (n-ref.comp) refers to comparison. Some examples of comparative referential noun are ဒေါန့် /dɔn/ 'over (somebody or something) in quality,' ခှိည် /kʰɤj/ 'as, in the same way,' မံၚ် /məŋ/ 'as much/many as, about,' ဘုံရ့် /bʌr/ 'same amount of,' etc.

Sequential referential noun (n-ref.seq) refers to sequence. Two examples of sequential referential noun are ရအာတ် /raˑʔat/ '(time/space) before' and ရဘံန့် /raˑbən/ '(time/space) after.'

9.1.3. Verb (v)
Verbs are words that refer to action, behavior, change, existence, will, etc. In view of semantics, there are several kinds of verbs in GP (SL).[75]

Action verb refers to actions and behaviors. Some examples of action verb are ဒါး /dʌh/ 'strike,' ဟောမ် /hɔm/ 'eat,' ဇောည် /ɟɔj/ 'help,' ပြိုး /proh/ 'shout,' ဒီရ့် /diɽ/ 'read,' ယှုမ် /jum/ 'laugh,' etc.

Experiential verb refers to sensation and cognition. Some examples of experiential verb are မေန့် /men/ 'look,' ဆတိုၚ် /saˑtuŋ/ 'hear, feel,' နုပ် /nəp/ 'know,' ထၚ် /tʰaŋ/ 'think,' ပုံရ်နော /pʌr.nɔ/ 'learn,' etc.

Existential verb refers to existence and change. Some examples of existential verb are ယှိဝ် /jɤ/ 'possess,' ဘုံပ် /bʌp/ 'happen (illness),' ဟြာည် /hraj/ 'disappear,' စုံမ် /com/ 'immerse,' ဇၑ်း /ɟʌh/ 'fall,' etc.

Mental verb refers to psychology and mentality. Some examples of mental verb are ရက် /rək/ 'love,' ရအီရ့် /raˑʔiɽ/ 'abhour, disgust,' ကုံရ်ဇေ /kʌr.ve/ 'pity,' ကုံရ်ဂေတ် /kʌr.get/ 'hope,' ယော /jɔ/ 'fear,' etc.

Command verb refers to command and request. Some examples of command verb are တံမ် /təm/ 'instruct,' ဆုတ် /sut/ 'order,' ဒဲး /dɛh/ 'give (order/request),' etc.

Directive verb (vdir) refers to action with direction. Some examples of directive verb are ဟၑ်ံ /hʌʔ/ 'move up,' လေး /leh/ 'move down,' ဇေၚ် /veŋ/ 'move back (go/come),' လၑ်း /lʌh/ 'move to (go),' ယှိဝ်, /jɤ\/ 'come from,' etc.

Judgement verb refers to judgement. Some examples of judgement verb are မ္ဍိဝ်း /mɤh/ 'be, correct,' ပ /pʰaˑ/ 'be equal to,' ခှိည် /kʰɤj/ 'be like,' etc.

Capability verb refers to capability. Two examples of capability verb are ဘုံန့် /bɤn/ 'allow,' ပဲန့် /pɛn/ 'be able to (skillwise),' နုပ် /nəp/ 'be able to (cognitive),' etc.

Passive verb (vi-pass) refers to passive action that it is the subject of the verb being affected. Grammatically, it is a special kind of intrasitive verb.[76] Two examples of passive verb are ဘုံပ် /bʌp/ 'be ill with (illness)' and ကဆေ /kaˑse/ 'be ashamed.'

Here is a list of grammatical features of verb in GP (SL).
a. It can be put in this frame.

---

[74] See section 11.1.1.2. Temporal Embedded Clause (EmCl-temp).

[75] In view of grammatical structure, GP (SL) verbs can be group into transitive verb (vt), intransitive verb (vi), linking verb (vlink), and directive verb (vdir). See section 5.2. PREDICATE.

[76] For an illustration of passive verb functioning in clause, see section 5.2.2. Intransitive PREDICATE. See also the table of Active/Passive-SUBJECT Clause Structures in section 5.1. SUBJECT.

```
   _____    ကာ    _____
             ka
             NEG
   v         neg    v
   _____  or not
```

b. It can be modified by negator but not by degree adverb such as ညှိုးညှိုး /ɲoh.ɲoh/ 'very much.'
c. It can form a reduplicative pattern.[77]
d. It most often fills the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL. Most verbs are transitive that can take COMPLEMENT, and some are intransitive that cannot. Directive verbs quite often serve as POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

9.1.4. Adjective (adj)
Adjectives are words that refer to shape and quality of person and thing, or state of action, behavior, development, etc. In view of semantics, there are three main kinds of adjectives in GP (SL).

   Qualitative adjective (adj-qual) refers to shape and quality. Some examples of qualitative adjective are ချ်တ် /djət/ 'small,' တိုရိုင်ဇာရ် /to.roŋ.ɹar/ 'tall and thin,' ကံတ်ငင် /kət.ŋəŋ/ 'cold,' ကျ /kjaˑ/ 'excellent,' etc.

   Quantitative adjective (adj-quan) refers to amount. Some examples of quantitative adjective are ဘ္လံမ် /bləm/ 'many, much,' ခြ္ဘ္ /breʔ/ 'few,' စရဲတ် /caˑrɛt/ 'few, little,' ဒိုည်ႇဒိုည်ႇ /dojˀ.dojˀ/ 'all,' အ္ကုန်ဒါ /ʔu.kʌn.da/ 'half,' ပုံရ်ဒိ /pʌr.di/ 'some,' etc. They can directly modify a noun. This is how it is distinct from a indefinite quantifier that needs to take a measure and form a quantifier phrase in order to modify a noun.

   Stative adjective (adj-stat) refers to state. Some examples of stative adjective are ရ္ျန် /rjən/ 'happy,' ဆီန် /sin/ 'ripe,' ၚ်ရ္ႇဒါင် /ŋwəɹ.daŋ/ 'with great value,' ယေန်ငင် /jen.ŋəŋ/ 'peaceful,' ၡ်ၚ် /n̥ɯʔ/ 'dull,' ခြဲတ် /kʰrɛt/ 'deft,' etc.

   Here is a list of grammatical features of adjective in GP (SL).
a. It can be put in these frames.

```
   (n, prn, NP)  _____   ဒိုရ် / ခေါ်န်   (n, prn, NP)
                          dor / dɔn
                          ...than
   n, prn, NP    adj      n-ref        n, prn, NP
   (n, prn, NP) _____ than (n, prn, NP)


   (n, prn, NP)  _____   ဒါ,        ဘ္ဘီ
                          daˀ        bi
                          ...than     people
   n, prn, NP    adj      n-ref       n
   LT: (n, prn, NP) _____ than people
   FT: (n, prn, NP) is most _____
```

b. It shares some similarity with intransitive verbs.
    i. It can be modified by negator.
    ii. It can serve as PREDICATE CENTRAL and can take CLAUSE MODIFIER.
    iii. It takes a zero COMPLEMENT when it fills PREDICATE CENTRAL.
    iv. It can form reduplicative pattern, such as AA, ABAC, (der-A)(der-B), etc.
c. But it is different from most intransitive verbs in these ways.
    i. It usually can be modified by degree adverb such as ညှိုးညှိုး /ɲoh.ɲoh/ 'very much,' လ္ုတ်လာည /lut.laj/ 'exceedingly,' but not by some other adverbial forms in POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

---

[77] See chapter 14. Reduplication.

ii. It can be modified by negator, but may not by aspect auxiliary verb such as ဟွည်, /hwa·j/ 'finish,'

ဒၢ် /dʌʔ/ 'remain,' etc. and other kinds of auxiliary verbs in PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

iii. It serves as ATTRIBUTIVE.

iv. It can reduplicate and become an adverb, filling the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER, while a verb reduplicates and is still a verb.

GP (SL) adjective functions so similar to verb that, in another analysis, it may be classified as a kind of verb, say descriptive or stative verb, rather than adjective. When it modifies a noun, it is an embedded clause that modifies the head noun in a noun phrase. The noun phrase in this example literally should read 'mangos which were ripe,' rather than 'ripe mangos.'

WS2.2	အုံၢ်န်	ဟောမ်	ပ္လေတြို	ဆီၢ်န်
	ʔʌn	hɔm	ple.bri·	sin
	3S	eat	mango(round)	ripe
	prn-per	vt	n	* v-state
			NP	

She ate ripe mangos.

However, this stative-verb approach does not work for GP (SL). Consider the noun phrase in this example analyzed in stative-verb approach.

WS56.8	လာ်း	မှာန်	ဘီ	ဟၢ်ာ	ဟော	ကုံၢ်န်မဲ	အာည်
	lʌh	man	bi	hʌʔ	hɔ	kʌn.mɛ	ʔaj
	move to (go)	invite	people	do open ceremony	palace	new	1D (inclusive)
	vdir	vt	n	vt	n	* v-state	prn-per
						PREDICATE	SUBJECT
						EmCl	
					CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTE	
					NP		

Go to invite people to do open ceremony for our new palace.

Following such analysis, the noun phrase literally should read, 'the palace which we were new,' which does not make sense or is not the actual meaning. Even if it may suggest that ကုံၢ်န်မဲ /kʌn.mɛ/ 'new' should be considered forming a noun phrase with ဟော /hɔ/ 'palace' and the personal pronoun modifies this noun phrase ဟောကုံၢ်န်မဲ /hɔ kʌn.mɛ/ 'new palace' that the phrase literally reads 'our palace which is new,' like this,

WS56.8	လာ်း	မှာန်	ဘီ	ဟၢ်ာ	ဟော	ကုံၢ်န်မဲ	အာည်
	lʌh	man	bi	hʌʔ	hɔ	kʌn.mɛ	ʔaj
	move to (go)	invite	people	do open ceremony	palace	new	1D (inclusive)
	vdir	vt	n	vt	n	* v-state	prn-per
					CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTE	
					NP		
					CENTRAL		ATTRIBUTE
					NP		

Go to invite people to do open ceremony for our new palace.

the problem of this stative-verb approach for GP (SL) becomes more obvious when such a noun phrase is compared with the noun phrase in this example.

WSR5.1	ဆငီ	ဆၟ်တဲ	ဂါ�ရ	နၟ်	လ	ပူ�ရ်	ဆငီ	ဒိနၟ်
	saˑŋi	sʌʔ.tɛ	gar	nʌʔ	laˑ	pur	saˑŋi	din
	day	fast	3D	be full	exactly	seven	UNIT(time,day)	that
	n	vi	prn-per	vi	adv	NP		
		PREDICATE	SUBJECT					
		EmCl						
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE						
	NP							

The days that they fasted completed seven good days, …

Proposed by the stative-verb approach, the noun phrase in the second example has exactly the same structure as the noun phrase in the first example. The noun phrase structure is noun-verb-personal pronoun. In the second example, literally, it should read 'the days which they fasted' and not 'their days which fast.' Even though the so-called descriptive/stative verb may function in a different way from intransitive verb, it is grammatically perplexing to read the same structure in two different ways. That is, in case of having a so-called descriptive/stative verb as modifier in a noun phrase, its subject is the head noun preceding it; in case of having an intransitive verb as modifier in a noun phrase, its subject is the nominal form following it. Otherwise, if it is to insist reading the same structure in the same way, the second example may be read 'their fasting days' literally, like this,

WSR5.1	ဆငီ	ဆၟ်တဲ	ဂါ�ရ	နၟ်	လ	ပူ�ရ်	ဆငီ	ဒိနၟ်
	saˑŋi	sʌʔ.tɛ	gar	nʌʔ	laˑ	pur	saˑŋi	din
	day	fast	3D	be full	exactly	seven	UNIT(time,day)	that
	n	vi	prn-per	vi	adv	NP		
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE						
	NP							
	CENTRAL		ATTRIBUTIVE					
	NP							

Their fasting days completed seven good days, …

That is, in the other way round, it is to have an intransitive verb filling the position of ATTRIBUTIVE. No matter reading the same structure in different was or in the same way, the so-called stative-verb approach in analysis is unnecessarily complicated. Rather, in GP (SL), since this word class functions so differently from verb, this grammar decides to distinguish adjective from verb and gives up the stative-verb approach.

9.1.5. Auxiliary Verb (aux)
Auxiliary verbs are words that refer to aspect, capability, intention, etc. of an action. In view of semantics, there are several kinds of auxiliary verbs in GP (SL).

Aspect auxiliary verb (aux-asp) refers to aspect of an action. Some examples of aspect auxiliary verb are ဟွညၟ်, /hwaˑjˋ/ 'finish' (perfective), ဒါၟ် /dʌʔ/ 'continue/remain' (progressive, durative), တိုမၟ် /tɤm/ 'ever' (experiential), ယွဲၟ်, /jɤˋ/ 'begin (to action)' (inchoative), ဒီ /di/ 'will' (pending, impending),[78] etc.

Capability auxiliary verb (aux-cap) refers to capability and possibility of an action. Some examples of capability auxiliary verb are ယာ, /jaˋ/ 'dare,' ဆမာ /saˑma/ 'prone to,' etc.

Intention auxiliary verb (aux-intent) refers to intention of an action. Some examples of intention auxiliary verb are ဆိနၟ် /sin/ 'desire,' ဘုဲပ် /bʌp/ 'be forced to,' ဒငၟ် /dəŋ/ 'intentionally,' နဲတၟ် /nɛt/ 'hurry,' etc.

Here is a list of grammatical features of auxiliary verb in GP (SL).
a. It can take negator, except aspect auxiliary verbs.
b. It cannot form a reduplicative pattern.

---

[78]   It may be considered as intention auxiliary verb.

c. It can only be followed by verb and verbal forms, except SP verbal phrase, and not by noun and nominal forms.

d. It always serves as PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

9.1.6. Adverb (adv)

Adverbs are words that refer to degree, scope, manner, mood, negation etc. of an action or a quality. The most significant grammatical feature of GP (SL) adverbs is that they usually serve as POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER in a clause, except negator which fills PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER. This is a determinant to distinguish adverbs from adjectives, which can fill the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL. Apparently, there are some words having double word class of adjective and adverb. Some adverbs can be formed by reduplication of adjectives, but not all adverbs with reduplication pattern are generated from adjectives. In view of semantics, there are several kinds of adverbs in GP (SL).

Degree adverb (adv-deg) refers to degree. Some examples of degree adverb are လွတ်လာည် /lut.laj/ 'exceedingly,' လှိုဝ်လှိုဝ် /lɤ.lɤ/ 'in excess (time),' ရှိုးရှိုး /roh.roh/ 'very (red),' ညှိုးညှိုး /ŋoh.ŋoh/ 'very much,' etc.

Scope adverb (adv-scope) refers to scope. Some examples of scope adverb are ဒိုည့် /dojˋ/ 'completely,' လလ /laˑ.laˑ/ 'exactly,' ထဲင် /tʰɛŋ/ 'also,' ဘိုဝ် /bɤ/ 'also,' etc.

Manner adverb (adv-mann) refers to manner. Some examples of manner adverb are ရှမ် /rum/ 'together,' ရာင် /raŋ/ 'alone,' ရောတ် /rɔt/ 'achieved (having a certain result),' ထိုင် /tʰɤŋ/ 'slowly,' လလ /laˑ.laˑ/ 'well,' ထဲင် /tʰɛŋ/ 'again/repeated,' ပွ်တ် /pwət/ 'momentarily,' ပဲတ် /pɛt/ 'at once,' etc.

Mood adverb (adv-mood) refers to mood. Some examples of mood adverb are လှိုည် /loj/ 'just, (not) even,' ဘိုဝ် /bɤ/ 'still (used in request),' ညှိုး /ŋoh/ 'really,' etc.

Negator (neg) refers to negation. Some examples of negator are ကာ /ka/ 'not (used in indicative clause),' မည် /maˑj/ 'not (used in imperative clause),' ငှုမ် /ŋəm/ 'not yet,' etc.

Besides, *clause level adverb (adv-cl)* serves as CLAUSE MODIFIER instead of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER. Two examples of clause level adverb are အလှိုဝ့်အလဲ /ʔaˑlɤʔ.ʔaˑlɛ/ 'unexpectedly,' ဆေဆေ /se.se/ 'always,' etc.

9.1.7. Quantifier (quan)

Quantifiers are words that refer to quantity. They are a kind of determiners that modify nouns by limiting their meaning in some way. Quantifiers limit nouns in their quantity. GP (SL) has three kinds of quantifiers, namely numeral, indefinite quantifier, and interrogative quantifier. All of them take a measure to form a quantifier phrase, which serves as ATTRIBUTIVE in a noun phrase, in order to modify a noun. This is how they are distinct from adjective, especially quantitative adjective.

Numeral (num), which is a kind of definite quantifier, refers to number and numerical order.[79] Numeral that refers to number is called <u>cardinal (num.car)</u>. GP (SL) cardinal can be further classified into coefficient and place. The cardinal ကိုရ် /gɤr/ 'ten' is both coefficient and place. Even though GP (SL) has a full set of cardinals, Shan numerals are widely used in daily life and in counting after "five" while GP (SL) numerals are used in counting from "one" to "five". Here is a list of GP (SL) cardinal coefficients and places.

Cardinal Coefficients				*Cardinal Places*		
အှု	/ʔu/	'one'		--	--	'unit'
အာရ်	/ʔar/	'two'		ကိုရ်	/gɤr/	'ten (10)'
အွည်	/ʔwaˑj/	'three'		ပိုရ်ယား	/pʌr.jih/	'hundred (100)'
ဖိုန်	/pʰon/	'four'		ဟြဲင်	/hrɛŋ/	'thousand (1,000)'
ဖန်	/pʰən/	'five'		မှိုန်	/mɯn/	'ten thousand (10,000)'
တောရ်	/tɔr/	'six'		ဆဲန်	/sɛn/	'lac (100,000)'

---

[79] For the structure of numerals, see section 8.3.6. Numeral Compound.

ပူ႓ရ်ႆ	/pur/	'seven'	လာန်ႆ ဆာန်ႆ	/lan/ or /san/	'million (1,000,000)'
တာ	/ta/	'eight'	ကဒေ	/ka·de/	'ten million (10,000,000)'
တီမ်	/tim/	'nine'		
အ္ကို႓ရ်ႆ	/ʔu.kɤr/	'ten'		

Numeral that refers to order is called <u>ordinal (num.ord)</u>. GP (SL) has ordinal, such as, ဇူ;အ္ /ɹuh.ʔu/ 'first,' ဇူ;အာရ် /ɹuh.ʔar/ 'second,' ဇူ;အ္ဝည် /ɹuh.ʔwa·j/ 'third,' ဇူ;ဖို႓န် /ɹuh.pʰon/ 'fourth,' etc. However, Burmese usage of Pali ordinals is quite common instead, as far as the speaker knows the Pali words. Very often, cardinal is used for ordinal when it is clear in the context, especially in an expression with the verb ရောတ် /rɔt/ 'reach' or ဘို႓န် /bɤn/ 'get' to show temporal location. Here is an example.

WSR2-56.1 ရောတ်   ပွ်တ်   ပူ႓ရ်ႆ   ဆီ
           rɔt   pwət   pur   sa·ŋi
           reach   DONE AWAY WELL   seven   day
           vi   adv-mann   card-coeff n
           On the seventh day, …

GP (SL) ***indefinite quantifier (quan-indef)*** refers to unclear, unspecified proportion of a certain group of people or things, such as တွ်န် /twən/ 'every, each,' လည် /la·j/ 'various (different), each,' ပည် /pa·j/ 'all,' ပို်န် /pʌn/ 'some,' ကို်န်ဒါ႓ /kʌn.daˋ/ 'half,' etc.

There is an ***interrogative quantifier (quan-interrog)***, ဒါင် /daŋ/. It literally means 'big, great' but is also used to ask the question of 'how many' about an exact amount by forming an interrogative quantifier phrase with a measure.

9.1.8. Measure (meas)

Measures are words that refer to unit for measuring and calculating. Usually, GP (SL) counts things and shows the number of things with corresponding measures that, grammatically, represents them in form of quantifier phrase, that is a numeral plus a measure.[80] However, when the number is ten or over, the usage of measure becomes optional.

GP (SL) has two sub-classes of measures. One is noun measure and another one is verb measure. Noun measures refer to units of persons and things. Noun measures can be further classified into proper measures and loan measures, which are borrowed from nouns.[81] Verb measures refer to units of actions and there is only one kind, which is action measure.

Individual measure (meas-ind) is used for individual things. Some examples of individual measure are ဖို႓န် /pʰɯn/ (for clothes), စိုပ် /cop/ (for small bag), ကဇ်တ် /ka·ɹwət/ (for water drop), ည်င် /ɲəŋ/ (for string), ကို်န်ဘ္ျု /kʌn.blja·/ (for thick flat thing), ဝို်င် /gwəŋ/ (for ring), တို /to/ (for animal and insect), က္ /ku/ (for people), ပ်င် /pəŋ/ (for round thing), တို်င် /tɯŋ/ (for plant), ကာ, /kaˋ/ (for branch), etc.

Collective measure (meas-coll) is used for things which are formed by grouping of two or more things. Some examples of collective measure are ကို်ရ်ႆပို်မ် /kʌr.pom/ (for general things), ရ်င် /ra·nɤŋ/ (for animals), ဆ္မ် /sum/ 'a pair,' etc.

Metrologic measure (meas-metro) is used for measurement of length, capacity, and weight. Some examples of metrologic measure are ဘ်င် /baŋ/ (for length, three feet), ရက်ဝ်တ် /ra·kwət/ (for weight, a yoke), ဘ်�︋ /bʌʔ/ (for capacity, about a Myanmar litre), etc.

Temporal measure (meas-temp) is used for time. Some of them are loan words. Some examples of native temporal measure are နာရီ /na.ri/ 'hour,' ဆီ /sa·ŋi/ (day), ဆို်မ် /sɤm/ (night), ကျို်ရ် /kjər/ (month), ဆ်န်မ် /sa·nʌm/ (year), etc.

Action measure (meas-act) is used for actions, for example, လို႓ဝ်; /lɤh/ (for frequency).

---

[80] See section 10.1.4. Quantifier Phrase (QP).
[81] See section 9.3. Multiple Word Class.

9.1.9. Demonstrative (dem)

Demonstratives are words that refer to someone or something in terms of proximity or remoteness from the speakers. They are another kind of determiners and limit nouns in their distance from the speakers. Here is a list of three demonstratives in GP (SL) from the nearest to the farthest from the speaker, follwed by two examples for comparison.

အိီဝ်	/ʔɯ/	in sight	right at speaker's place and a bit away from the audience
နာန်	/nan/	in sight	not near to both audience and speaker
တည်	/taˑj/	in sight	far from both speaker and audience who are near to one another

ဒေင်	အိီဝ်	ဆငါည်
deŋ	ʔɯ	saˑŋaj
road	this	(distance) far from
n	dem	adj

LT: this road is far (the speaker will go this journey but doesn't start yet)

ဒေင်	ဆငါည်
deŋ	saˑŋaj
road	(distance) far from
n	adj

LT: a far road (the speaker doesn't go the journey, only comments it)

GP (SL) demonstratives usually follow the nominal forms which they demonstrate or limit. They can be used to form spatial nouns by following the noun ဟာ /ha/ 'place,' for example, ဟာအိီဝ် /ha.ʔɯ/ 'here (at the speaker's place),' ဟာနာန် /ha.nan/ 'there,' etc.

There are another two demonstratives, ဒိန် /din/ and ပိ /pi/, referring to someone or something seen before but out of sight at the time of speaking that they usually function in discourse, making reference to someone or something known or mentioned. ဒိန် /din/ refers to the current topic in the foreground, giving an impression that the topic refered is near to the audience.[82] ပိ /pi/ refers to a topic which has been placed at the background but is mentioned on the foreground. It is reacalled from the mind of both speaker and audience that it gives an impression that such topic is far away from speaker and audience who are near to each other.

ဒိန် /din/ is also used as quotation marker, signaling what precedes it as a quotation. Compare these two examples. The first one is a restatement; the second one is a quotation.

WS42.1	ဘိ	ကြည်	နာင်	ဒိ	ဘောည်	ဆပြိုတ်	ဒေ
	bi	graˑj	naŋ	di	bej	saˑprwət	de
	people	tell	princess	WILL	throw	turban	SELF
	n	vt	Cl				
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT				

people said that the princess would threw her turban

M44-16.3	မိ	ကုိန်	နုပ်	ဒါး	အော	အုင်	ညိုး	မိ	ဒိန်
	mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɲoh	mi	din
	2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
	prn-per	conn-cl	VP		Cl				dem
	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT				

If only you can say 'I really love you,' ...

---

[82] This may imply that the topic or theme referred is a bit away from the speaker that the preferable gloss for ဒိန် /din/ is 'that' instead of 'this.'

9.1.10. Proform
Proforms are words that have functions of substituting or demonstrating for other words. If it substitutes and demonstrates a noun, it is called pronoun. GP (SL) has four main kinds of proforms, three out of which are pronouns.

9.1.10.1. Personal Pronoun (prn-per)
Personal pronouns are words that demonstrate and substitute persons or things. Here is a table of GP (SL) personal pronouns regarding person and number.

Table 21: GP (SL) Personal Pronouns

Person ╲ Number		Singular	Dual	Plural
First person	inclusive[83]	အော /ʔɔ/	အာည် /ʔaj/	အယ် /ʔɛ/
	exclusive[84]		ယာရ် /jar/	ယဲ /jɛ/
Second person		မီ /mi/	ပါရ် /par/	ပဲ /pɛ/
Third person		အှ် န် /ʔʌn/	ဂါရ် /gar/	ဂဲ /gɛ/

As GP (SL) is an isolating language and not an inflecting language that noun shows its function by its position. These personal pronouns have the forms the same for whatever functions, but have different positions for different functions. For example, when it follows a noun, it shows ownership or kinship.

The third person pronouns, ဂဲ /gɛ/ , ဂါရ် /gar/, and အှ်န် /ʔʌn/, have speacial usages. The third person dual and plural pronouns ဂဲ /gɛ/ and ဂါရ် /gar/ can function as nominal particles to show the number of an item.[85] The third person singular pronoun အှ်န် /ʔʌn/ can substitute something known that belongs or relates to someone which is expressed by another pronoun, expressing the idea like the possessive pronouns in English. Here is an example.

WSR2-33.5	တ	ကုဲ်ရ်လှုင်	ဂဲ	ဒီန်	စံမ်	မှုိဝ်းပဲတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္လောႚ	ဘဲ	ဂဲ	အှ်န်
	ta·	kʌr.ḻeŋ	gɛ	din	cəm	mɤh.pɛt	hɔj.blɔˠ	bɛ	gɛ	ʔʌn
	TIME RNP	play together	3P	that conn-cl	GEN prt-v	YES-emp cs-emp	white water-snail n	overcome vt	3P prn-per	3S prn-per
	CLAUSE MODIFIER			<link>		SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	

When they played together, White Water-snail still won theirs (their beans).

It is noteworthy that even though what to be substituted is plural in number, it is the third person singular pronoun which is in use. Compare these two examples. The first one is right and the second one is wrong.

ယဲ	ယှ်င်	ယဲ	အှ်န်
jɛ	jəŋ	jɛ	ʔʌn
1P (exclusive)	sell	1P (exclusive)	3S
prn-per	vt	prn-per	prn-per

We sell ours (our things).

ယဲ	ယှ်င်	ယဲ	ဂဲ
jɛ	jəŋ	jɛ	gɛ
1P (exclusive)	sell	1P (exclusive)	3P
prn-per	vt	prn-per	prn-per

---

[83] 'Inclusive' means including the audience.
[84] 'Exclusive' means excluding the audience.
[85] See section 9.2.2.2. Nominal Particle (prt-n).

However, when what to be substituted is belong to a singular third person, it is wrong to put two အှ်န် /ʔʌn/ together. In this case, another expression ဟာအှ်န် /ha.ʔʌn/ should be used. Compare these examples. The first one and the third one are correct and the second one is incorrect.

အော	ဖို့ရဲ့	မီ	အှ်န်
ʔɔ	ɟɤɾ	mi	ʔʌn
1S	buy	2S	3S
prn-per	vt	prn-per	prn-per

I buy yours (your things).

အော	ဖို့ရဲ့	အှ်န်	အှ်န်
ʔɔ	ɟɤɾ	ʔʌn	ʔʌn
1S	buy	3S	3S
prn-per	vt	prn-per	prn-per

×

အော	ဖို့ရဲ့	ဟာ	အှ်န်
ʔɔ	ɟɤɾ	ha	ʔʌn
1S	buy	thing	3S
prn-per	vt	NP	

I buy his things.

9.1.10.2. Reflexive Personal Pronoun (prn-refl)

GP (SL) has a reflexive personal pronoun ဒေ /de/ 'SELF,' refering to the subject of a clause when it appears again in the same clause. It takes the form of personal pronoun when it refers to first person, regardless the number. Comparing these three examples.

အှ်န်	ဆီန်	ဒါး	ဒေ	လူ
ʔʌn	sin	dah	de	la̗·
3S	DESIRE	say	SUBJ	clever
prn-per	aux-intent	vt	prn-refl	adj

He wants to say that he is clever.

မီ	ဆီန်	ဒါး	ဒေ	လူ
mi	sin	dah	de	la̗·
2S	DESIRE	say	SUBJ	clever
prn-per	aux-intent	vt	prn-refl	adj

You want to say that you are clever.

အော	ဆီန်	ဒါး	အော	လူ
ʔɔ	sin	dah	ʔɔ	la̗·
1S	DESIRE	say	1S	clever
prn-per	aux-intent	vt	prn-per	adj

I want to say that I am clever.

A reflexive personal pronoun can function in two ways. It can function in clause, filling the position of COMPLEMENT in a transitive PREDICATE or the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER on its own. It can also function in phrase, taking a verbal form to make a subject-predicate verbal phrase[86], filling the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER to modify the verb by giving the purpose of the action. For example,

---

[86] See section 10.2.1. Subject-Predicate (SP) Verbal Phrase.

MG430

ဆဉ	ကတၢ်ရ	ဒ�ေ	ရ�póန်	ဆိုရ	ဒါင်
saˑŋi	kaˑtʌr	de	raˑbən	sor	daŋ
sun	cover	SELF	behind	hill	great
n	vt	prn-refl	RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

The sun disappeared behind the mountain.

WS23.3

အၢ်န	ဒၢ်	လောတ်	ဒေ	ရóန်	ယာဖည်
ʔʌn	dʌʔ	lɔt	de	raˑbən	ja.pʰaj
3S	REMAIN	transform	SELF	behind	ogress
prn-per	aux-mann	vi	prn-refl	RNP	
SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

He kept transforming himself (not others) in the ogress' absence.

WS47.5

ပၢ်ရ	ယ္ၢ်ဝ်	(ဒေ မၢ်င်ဂိ်ည်)	ဒေ	ဖ္ိရ်း	ဒေ	ဟော်မ်	ဒေ	ဒါ
par	jɤ	(de məŋ.goj)	de	ɟɤ	de	hɔm	de	da
2D	possess	(ring)	SELF	buy	SELF	eat	SELF	dress
prn-per	vt	(n)	prn-refl	vt				
			VP(SP)	VP	VP(SP)		VP(SP)	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		POST-C. MODIFIER					

FT: You have (the rings) to buy your daily use.
LT: You have (the rings) for buying (things) for your eating and dressing.

When the subject is understood and omitted, reflexive personal pronoun should take the form of its corresponding personal pronoun in order to make the message clear without confusion. This is common in imperative clause. Here is an example.

WSR2-50.10

(မီ)	ဟၢ်ာ် မ္ၢန်	မီ	ဒ္ိည်	ထဲင်	က့္ၢ်န် ဒေ မၢ ဒေ ဂဲ အေ့
(mi)	hʌʔ man	mi	dɤj	tʰɛŋ	kun de ma de gɛ ʔeʔ
(2S)	move invite up	2S	bring, take	PROG-also	father SELF mother SELF PL REQ
(prn-per)	VP(VV)	prn-per	vt	adv-scope	NP prt-mood
		VP(SP)			
(SUBJECT)	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	POST-C. MOD.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood

Go and invite your father and mother also.

Reflexive personal pronoun ဒေ /de/ primarily refers to a known, mentioned subject and is employed to express a particular, once for all event about the subject. No matter it alone fills the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER or it forms a SP verbal phrase to fill that position in a clause, its usage gives nuances to or even alters the meaning of the verb which it modifies. First, for an illustration on how ဒေ /de/ generally functions, compare these two examples.

ဂဲ	ယော	ဒေ	ယံမ်
gɛ	jɔ	de	jəm
3P	fear	SELF	die
prn-per	vi	prn-refl	vi

They fear that they may die now

ဂဲ	ယော	ယံမ်
gɛ	jɔ	jəm
3P	fear	die
prn-per	vi	vi

They fear of death (in a general sense)

Second, when a ေ /de/ subject-predicate verbal phrase follows a verb relating to capability, permission, or process, such as နံပ် /nəp/ 'be able to,' ဘ္လိန် /bɤn/ 'be allowed,' ပဲန် /pɛn/ 'become,' etc., it gives nuance to the verb. Consider these two examples.

WS17.3	အ္လိန်	ကာ	ဘ္လိန်	ေ	ဝ္လည်	ဇောမ်	အယ်
	ʔʌn	ka	bɤn	de	gwaˑj	ɟɔm	ʔɛ
	3S	NEG (IND)	be allowed	SELF	dwell, stay	along with	1P (inclusive)
	prn-per	neg	vi	prn-refl	vi	RNP	

It cannot stay with us (even though it is allowed to and it wants to).

*WS17.3	အ္လိန်	ကာ	ဘ္လိန်	ဝ္လည်	ဇောမ်	အယ်
r.10	ʔʌn	ka	bɤn	gwaˑj	ɟɔm	ʔɛ
	3S	NEG (IND)	be allowed	dwell, stay	along with	1P (inclusive)
	prn-per	neg	vi	vi	RNP	

It is not allowed to stay with us at all.

ေ /de/ sometimes is omitted after a verb relating to capability, permission, or process, that it looks like two verbs in a row. Here is an example.

M44-16.3	ဘ္လည်	ကာ	နံပ်	တဲမ်	ဘ္လည်	ကာ	ပဲန်	ြ္လည်
	bɤj	ka	nəp	tɛm	bɤj	ka	pɛn	graˑj
	CONCS-even.though	NEG	able	write	CONCS-even.though	NEG	become	tell
	conn-cl	neg	vi	vt	conn-cl	neg	vlink	vt

hypothetical concessive sent-part.1
Even though you cannot write and you won't tell

ပ္လိန်	အ္လင်	ပ္လိန်	လ္လို	မီ
pʌn	ʔuˑŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb- OBJ	like, love	Emb- OBJ	wish	2S
NP				

hypothetical concessive sent-part.1 (cont')
what you love and wish,

မီ	က္လိန်	နံပ်	ဒါး	အော	အ္လင်	ည္လိုး	မီ	ဒိန်
mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɲoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	vi	vt	Cl				dem

hypothetical concessive sent-part.2
if only you can say 'I really love you,'

မွာန်	မီ	က္လရ္လေ	ဘ္လဝ်	အော	စိ
m̥an	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ciˑ
beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)	1S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood

hypothetical concessive sent-part.2 (cont')
I beg that you still pity me please.

However, in fact, ေ /de/ is hidden and understood. It is preferable to write ေ /de/ explicitly in this situation, even though it may be optionally omitted in speaking. That is, in 'standard,' good GP (SL), it should be written in this way,

*M44-	ဘၠိ်ည်		ကာ	နုဲပ်	ဒ၁	တဲမ်	ဘၠိ်ည်		ကာ	ပဲန်	ဒ၁	ကြ၁ည်
16.3	bɤj		ka	nəp	de	tɛm	bɤj		ka	pɛn	de	graˑj
	CONCS-even.though		NEG	able	SELF	write	CONCS-even.though		NEG	become	SELF	tell
	conn-cl		neg	vi	prn-refl	vt	conn-cl		neg	vlink	prn-refl	vt

hypothetical concessive sent-part.1
Even though you cannot write and you won't tell

ပၠိ်န်	အုဲင်	ပၠိ်န်	လၠို	မီ
pʌn	ʔuˑŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb- OBJ	like, love	Emb- OBJ	wish	2S
NP				

hypothetical concessive sent-part.1 (cont')
what you love and wish,

မီ	ကၠို်န်	နုဲပ်	ဒ၁	ဒါး	အော	အုဲင်	ညုဲး	မီ	ဒ်ိန်
mi	kʌn	nəp	de	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ɲoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	SELF	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	vi	prn-refl	vt	prn-per	Cl			dem

hypothetical concessive sent-part.2
if only you can say 'I really love you,'

မ်ှာန်	မီ	ကၠိ်ရ၁ေ	ဘၠို်ဝ်	အော	စ်ိ
m̥an	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ciˑ
beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)	1S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood

hypothetical concessive sent-part.2 (cont')
I beg that you still pity me please.

Third, ယၠို်ဝ် /jɤ/ have different meanings, depending on what follows it is a ဒ၁ /de/ SP verbal phrase or not, and what kind of ဒ၁ /de/ structure if it is. Consider these four examples.

*WS53.4	အ်ုနဲ	ယၠို်ဝ်		ဘြ်ိင်လဲ	ဘၠို်မ်
r.10	ʔʌn	jɤ		brəŋ.lɛ	bləm
	3S	find		horse cart	many
	prn-per	vt		NP	
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	

He saw many horse carts.

WS53.4	အ်ုနဲ	ယၠို်ဝ်	ဒ၁	ဘြ်ိင်လဲ	ဘၠို်မ်
	ʔʌn	jɤ	de	brəŋ.lɛ	bləm
	3S	find	SELF	horse cart	many
	prn-per	vt	prn-refl	NP	
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	

He had many horse carts.

WSR2-29.7	အ်ုနဲ	ယၠို်ဝ်	ဒ၁	တိုဲရ်း	ဟော၁ည်ဘ္ဘော၁,	ဒ၁
	ʔʌn	jɤ	de	tɤ̰	hɔj.blɔɤ	de
	3S	HAPPENED	SELF	see (from a distance)	white water-snail	SELF
	prn-per	vi	prn-refl	vt	NP	
			VP(SP)			
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT	

She really saw her White Water-snail from a distance.

WSR2-41.7

ပါရ်	ယ္ဘ္ဝ်ိ	ေဒ	ယံင်	ေဒ	ေဟာမ်	ေဒ	ဒါ
par	jɤ	de	jəŋ	de	hɔm	de	da
2D	possess	SELF	sell	SELF	eat(rice)	SELF	dress
prn-per	vt	prn-refl	VP(HM)				
		VP(SP)					
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST C. MODIFIER					

They had something to sell for their daily life

Contrasting the first example with the others, it is obvious that the verb ယ္ဘ္ဝ်ိ /jɤ/ carries the meaning of 'see' without ေဒ /de/ following it, and basically the meaning of 'possess' with ေဒ /de/ filling in POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER of the clause, no matter ေဒ /de/ alone or a ေဒ /de/ SP verbal phrase. Contrasting the last two examples with the second one, ယ္ဘ္ဝ်ိ /jɤ/ becomes an intransitive verb when a ေဒ /de/ SP verbal phrase follows it. Contrasting the last two examples, the verb in the ေဒ /de/ SP verbal phrase gives nuances to the meaning of ယ္ဘ္ဝ်ိ /jɤ/, depending on whether or not it is a sense-related or cognition-related verb, such as တို်ရ်ိ /tɤɟ/ 'see (at a distance),' ငို်ပ် /ŋɤp/ 'look,' ဆတို်င် /saˑtuŋ/ 'hear, listen,' နို်ပ် /nəp/ 'know,' ရ္ဘ္ူပ် /rʌ.po/ 'dream,' etc.

Fourth, the verb ဘ္ဥ်ိပ် /bʌp/ is another verb that is quite affected by reflexive personal pronoun, especially reflexive SP verbal phrase. ဘ္ဥ်ိပ် /bʌp/ itself is a passive verb and means 'be ill with (illness).' When it is followed by another verb or reflexive SP verbal phrase, it becomes an intransitive verb and means 'be forced to.' Compare these two examples of ဘ္ဥ်ိပ် /bʌp/ being followed by a verb and by a reflexive SP verbal phrase.

Pock17.12

ဘ္ဘ်ိင်	ေဘ္ဘ္ဝ်ာ,	ပို်န်	အ္ဘ္ုန်	ေအာ	အ္ဘ္ု	တို်
brəŋ	blɔɤ	pʌn	ʔun	ʔɔ	ʔu	to
horse	white	Emb- OBJ	store up	1S	one	UNIT(animal,insect)
NP						

COMPLEMENT

The white horse which I kept

မ္ီ	ဘ္ဥ်ိပ်	ေဒ္ဲး	တ	ေအာ	ေအ္ဘ်ိ
mi	bʌp	dɛh	taˑ	ʔɔ	ʔeʔ
2S	INVOLUNTARY-be forced to	give	DIR	1S	TRUE
prn-per	vi-pass	vt		RNP	prt-mood
	VP(SM)				
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE		
			MODIFIER		

you must give it to me

Pock 3.3

အ္ဘ်ိန်	အ္ဘ်ိ	က္ဘ်ိ	ဘ္ဥ်ိပ်	ေဒ	ရ္ဥ်ိရ်	ကာန်	အာရ်	န္ဲ
ʔʌn	ʔu	ku	bʌp	de	rʌr	kan	ʔar	nɛ
3S	one	UNIT(person)	INVOLUNTARY-be forced oneself to	SELF	do	work	two	UNIT(kind)
NP			vi-pass	VP(SP)		NP		
			VP(HM)					
SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT		

He must work two jobs by himself.

In the first example, ဘၣ်ပ /bʌp/ 'be forced to' is followed by a verb. It may show that the subject does not have the intention to do the action of ဒး /dɛh/ 'give' but cannot control not to do it.[87] It may be more an order. In the second example, ဘၣ်ပ /bʌp/ 'be forced to' is followed by a reflexive SP verbal phrase. It shows that the subject also does not have the intention to do the action expressed in the reflexive SP verbal phrase, ရ့ရ် /rʌr̥/ 'do, make' in the example, but manages to force oneself to do it because of one's duty, for example, or other reasons. It may also be understood as a kind of convincement or persuasion.

Reflexive SP verbal phrase also may be the only way to link another passive verb to the passive verb ဘၣ်ပ /bʌp/ 'be forced to,' as GP (SL) may not allow two passive verbs in a row. Involving reflexive SP verbal phrase or not, then, may give an extra emphasis of passiveness on the passive verb in the reflexive SP verbal phrase, rather than giving any nuances to how the subject deals with the action of the verb. Compare these two examples.[88]

WSR 2-10.7	အာ္ည	ဘၣ်ပ	အာ္ည	ကဆေ
	ʔaj	bʌp	ʔaj	ka·se
	1D (inclusive)	INVOLUNTARY	1D (inclusive)	be ashamed
	prn-per	vi-pass	VP (SP)	
		VP		
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		

We are ashamed.

WSR 2-40.3	အော	ကဆေ		ဘီ	တာင်	ပါရ်
	ʔɔ	ka·se		bi	taŋ	par
	1S	be ashamed		people	on account of	2D
	prn-per	vi-pass		n	RNP	
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CL.MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

I'm ashamed before people because of them.

9.1.10.3. Demonstrative Pronoun (prn-dem)

Demonstrative pronouns are words that demonstrate or distinguish persons or things. GP (SL) demonstrative pronoun is formed by a demonstrative following the noun အီ /ʔi/ 'person,' that is, အီအီၣ်

---

[87] However, some speakers do not accept this usage of ဘၣ်ပ /bʌp/'be forced to' that it is followed by a verb instead of a reflexive SP verbal phrase to express the sense of involuntary helplessness. It may be because this usage would be confused with another passive usage of the word. Compare these two examples.

အာ္န	ဘၣ်ပ	လုရး
ʔʌn	bʌp	lʌr̥
3S	PASSIVE	hit
prn-per	vi	vt

He was hit

အာ္န	ဘၣ်ပ	ဒေ	လုရး	မီ
ʔʌn	bʌp	de	lʌr̥	mi
3S	PASSIVE	SELF	hit	2S
prn-per	vi	prn-refl	vt	prn-per

I must hit you

[88] It is interesting to note that, in the case of ကဆေ /ka·se/ 'be ashamed,' the passive verb entirely fills the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL, like in the second example, only with first person singular pronoun in SUBJECT. It is in reflexive SP verbal phrase following ဘၣ်ပ /bʌp/, like in the first example, only with first person dual or plural pronoun in SUBJECT. In case of third person fills the SUBJECT in the clause, no matter it is realized in pronoun or common noun, both structures are valid.

/ʔi.ʔɯ/ 'this one (person or thing),' အီတည် /ʔi.ta·j/ 'that one (person or thing),' ဂဲအီဝ် /gɛ.ʔɯ/ 'these ones (person or thing),' ဂဲတည် /gɛ.ta·j/ 'those ones (person or thing),' etc.

There is an exception of demonstrative itself serving as demonstrative pronoun as well, that is ဒိန် /din/ 'this (for both concrete and abstract things).' It is mainly used to form discourse temporal markers, such as ဟွည်,ဒိန် /hwa·jˋ din/ 'after that (literally, 'having that finished'),' ဘိန်ညာခွိည်ဒိန် /bən ɲa kʰɤj din/ 'after that (literally, 'after doing/happening like that')),' etc.

9.1.10.4. Indefinite Pronoun (prn-indef)

Indefinite pronouns are words that demonstrate or substitute certain but not particular persons or things. Here are some examples for GP (SL) indefinite pronouns such as ဘီလေ့ /bi.l̥eh/ 'somebody,' အုနဲ /ʔu.nɛ/ 'something,' ဘီမှာ့ /bi.m̥ʌh/ 'anyone,' ဆိုင်မှာ့ /sʌŋ.m̥ʌh/ 'anything,' တွဲန်နဲ /twən.nɛ/ 'every kind,' etc.

9.1.10.5. Embedded Pronoun (prn-emb)

Embedded pronouns are words which introduce a clause embedded in a phrase[89] and link this embedded clause to a certain part, which usually is a noun, in its host phrase by demonstrating this certain part. Here is an example.

M67-12.2	ဘီ	အုန်	ဟွည်,	ယဲမ်	ကာ	ယိုဝ်	စိ	လောင်	ကာ	ကိုတ်
	bi	ʔʌn	hwa·jˋ	jəm	ka	jɤ	ci·	lɔŋ	ka	kɤt
	person n	Emb-SUBJ prn-emb /SUBJECT/ CENTRAL	FINISH aux-asp PREDICATE	die vi	NEG (IND) VP	find	POLITE	affair of	NEG (IND)	give birth
			EmCl ATTRIBUTIVE							
		NP								
	NP									
	SUBJECT Cl				PREDICATE					

Men who already died will be borned again.

In this example, the embedded pronoun အုန် /ʔʌn/ serves as the head of a noun phrase, which takes an embedded clause as a modifier. It also refers the noun ဘီ /bi/, which is outside the embedded clause, to the subject of the embedded clause. This noun phrase modifies the noun ဘီ /bi/ that a head-modifier noun phrase[90] is formed. This noun phrase serves as SUBJECT of the clause. In this way, the embedded pronoun relates the embedded clause to a noun.

The host noun phrase of embedded pronoun often serves as SUBJECT or COMPLEMENT in a clause, or CENTRAL in a referential noun phrase. There are three embedded pronouns commonly used in GP (SL). ပုန် /pʌn/ is for object in the embedded clause; အုန် /ʔʌn/ and အီ /ʔi/[91] are for subject in the embedded clause. အုန် /ʔʌn/ is used after a noun and အီ /ʔi/ after a pronoun. Here are two more examples.

---

[89] See section 11.1.1.1. Embedded Clause (EmCl).
[90] See section 10.1.1.2. Head-Modifier (HM) Noun Phrase.
[91] အီ /ʔi/ may be a ဇင်နိုင်/ɟəŋ.nəŋ/ dialect variant of ဘီ /bi/, which is GP (SL).

ဂဲ	အီ	ဂွ္ည်	ယာန်ဂုင်	ရာမ်	နံပ်	လိ	လုပ်ဘ္ဘံမ်
gɛ	ʔi	gwaˑj	jan.guˑŋ	ram	nəp	liˑ	lʌp.bləm
3P	Emb-SUBJ	dwell	Yangon	quite	know	word	generally
n	prn-emb	vi	n-prop	VP			adv-cl
	/SUBJECT/	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER				
		EmCl					
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE					
	NP						
NP							
SUBJECT			PREDICATE			CLAUSE MODIFIER	
Cl							

People who live in Yangon are literate generally.

Ab4.2	ယံင်	ပဲတ်		ဒ္ိုည္;	ဂြူ|ဂြ္ူမ်	ပုိန်	လေည်	တာ	ပီ
	jəŋ	pɛt		dojɤ	gru.grɤm	pʌn	lej	ta	pi
	sell	DONE AWAY/OFF		all	thing	Emb-OBJ	trade	old man	that
	VP				n	prn-emb	vt	n	dem
						/COMPLETMENT/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
							EmCl		
						CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE		
						NP			
					CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE			
					NP				

(He) sold away all the things which that old man traded.

9.1.10.6. Interrogative (interrog)

Interrogatives are words that are used in questions to stand for the item questioned. There are two basic interrogatives in GP (SL). They are ဆေ /se/ and မော /mɔ/, carrying the meaning of 'what' and 'which' respectively. ဆေ /se/ can function by itself in interrogative clause but မော /mɔ/ cannot[92]. Both of them take other morphemes and form a variety of interrogatives for questioning different items. Here is a list of interrogatives generated from ဆေ /se/.

Wordform		**Gloss**	**Literal Translation**
အဆေ	/ʔaˑse/[93]	'who'	what person
ဆေ...ည	/se...ɲa/	'why'	what to do [that…]
ဆေအ္ှ္န္မ္ှ္ိဝ်;	/se.ʔʌn.mɤh/	'why'	what it is [that…]
ဆေအ္ှ္န္ည	/se.ʔʌn.ɲa/	'why'	what it does [that…]

In colloquial GP (SL), the first two syllables in ဆေအ္ှ္န္မ္ှ္ိဝ်; /se.ʔʌn.mɤh/ and ဆေအ္ှ္န္ည /se.ʔʌn.ɲa/ always merge and the expressions reduce to [sʌn.mɤh] and [sʌn.ɲa], [sen.ɲa], or mostly [sin.ɲa] for the meaning of 'why.' This is to contrast with the clauses ဆေအ္ှ္န္မ္ှ္ိဝ်; /se.ʔʌn.mɤh/ 'what is it?' and ဆေအ္ှ္န္ည /se.ʔʌn.ɲa/ 'what does he/she do?' or idiomatically 'how is he/she?'

---

[92]   မော /mɔ/ have other meanings than 'what' when it is used by itself.

[93]   Probably, အဆေ /ʔi>se/ is အီ /ʔi/ plus ဆေ /se/ and literally means 'what person.' Undergoing tone sandhi that the emic tone in the word changes, the first syllable reduces its tone load and changes its vowel to short schwa /ə/.

မော /mɔ/ creates another set of interrogatives. Here is a list of examples.

မော /mɔ/-Interrogatives		
Wordform	**Gloss**	**Literal Translation**
ဟာမော /ha.mɔ/	'where'	which place
ယာမ်မော /jam.mɔ/	'when (unspecified)'	which time (unspecified)
အ့မော /ʔu.mɔ/	'when (past)'	which time (past)
ဘံန့မော /bən.mɔ/	'when (future)'	which time (future)
ခိုင့်မော /kʰɤj.mɔ/	'how'	like which way
ဘုံရမော /bʌr.mɔ/	'how much/many'	as much/many as which
အီမော /ʔi.mɔ/	'which (one)'	which person/thing

The interrogative အီမော /ʔi.mɔ/ can follow a noun in order to question about something specific. In this case, အီ /ʔi/ is quite often omitted and it looks like မော /mɔ/ following a particular item questioned. For example,

ယှိုင်	အီမော	မ့	မ
juɯŋ	ʔi.mɔ	mi	maˑ
meat	which	2S	like
n	interrog	prn-per	vt

Which kind of meat do you like?

⬇

ယှိုင်	မော	မ့	မ
juɯŋ	mɔ	mi	maˑ
meat	which	2S	like
n	Interrog	prn-per	vt

Which kind of meat do you like?

Interrogative pronouns can also function like an indefinite pronoun and be used in a statement, not a question, to denote certain details.[94] Here is an example.

WSR2-14.6-7	ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ရေတ်	ဟာမှၩ	အဆေ	ကာ	ဘုံန်	ကဗဲ့
	hɔj.blɔɣ	rɔt	ha.m̥ʌh	ʔaˑse	ka	bɤn	kaˑvɛʔ
	white water-snail	reach	any place	anyone	NEG (IND)	be allowed	play
	n	vi	prn-indef	prn-indef	VP		
	Cl.1			Cl.2			

Wherever White Water-snail arrives, no one is allowed to play it.

---

[94] This example can be re-written in this way, using a proper indefinite pronoun instead of interrogative pronoun.

*WSR2-14.6-7	ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ရေတ်	ဟာမှၩ	ဘီမှၩ	ကာ	ဘုံန်	ကဗဲ့
	hɔj.blɔ☐	rɔt	ha.m̥ʌh	bi.m̥ʌh	ka	bɤn	ka>vɛʔ
	white water-snail	arrive	any place	anyone	NEG (IND)	be allowed	play
	n	vi	prn-indef	prn-indef	VP		
	Cl.1			Cl.2			

Wherever White Water-snail arrives, no one is allowed to play it.

9.2. Function Word

Function words do not have lexical meaning and cannot serve as a clause constituent, disregarding independent constituent, on its own. They, however, are closely related to the grammatical structure of a clause and their main function is to link or attach certain words or phrases. This is a closed set that new words cannot be added to it. GP (SL) function words include connective, particle, interjection, and onomatopoeic word.

9.2.1. Connective (conn)

Connectives are words that join words, phrases, or clauses together and refer to certain chronological or logical relationship. Grammatically, there are two kinds of connectives in GP (SL). One kind functions in sentence, connecting clauses, called **clause connective (conn-cl)**. Another kind functions in phrase, connecting words or phrases, called **phrase connective (conn-ph)**.[95] Here is a list of GP (SL) connectives.

Clause Connectives					
Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.	Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.
ခိုည်လာ, /kʰɤj.laɣ/	'as if'	analogy	ဘိုည် /bɤj/	'even though'	concession
ဘံန် /bən/	'because'	causation	ဘီ /bi/	'despite'	concession
ကောပ် /kɔp/	'because'	causation	စမ် /cəm/	'however'	concession
ကောပ်ပိုဝ် /kɔp.pɤ/	'so'	causation	ကိုန် /gʌn/	'if, if only'	condition
ခိုည် /kʰɤj/	'as'	causation	ကောည်လိုည် /kɔj.loj/	'but'	contrast
ကြိုည် /krɤj/	'not yet'	chronological	မိုဝ်းဂိုဝ် /mɤh.gɣ/	'but'	contrast
ဘံန် /bən/	'after'	chronological	မိုဝ်းလိုည် /mɤh.loj/	'but'	contrast
ကိုန် /kʌn/	'when'	chronological	မိုဝ်းလိုည်ဂိုဝ် /mɤh.loj.gɣ/	'but'	contrast
ဒိုင် /dəŋ/	'when'	chronological	ကိုန်မိုဝ်း /kʌn.mɤh/	'in case of'	contrast
စိ /ci/	'then'	chronological	ပည် /paˑj/	'and'	coordination
စိုင် /cəŋ/	'then'	chronological	စမ် /cəm/	GEN	generalization
ယိုဝ်,မိုဝ်း /jɤɣ.mɤh/	'then'	chronological	ဆဲးဒိန် /sɛh.din/	'besides'	progress
စိုင်ပဲန် /cəŋ.pɛn/	'finally'	chronological	ဆဲး /sɛh/	'not only'	progress
စိပဲန် /ci.pɛn/	'finally'	chronological	ဂိုပ် /gɤp/	'even'	progress
			ယိုဝ်,မိုဝ်းထင် /jɤɣ.mɤh.tʰɛŋ/	'also'	progress

---

[95] For illustration of phrase connective, see section 10. Extension of Word.

Phrase Connectives					
Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.	Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.
ပည် /paˑj/	'and'	coordination	ဂါရ် /gar/	'and'	coordination

Among these connectives, ပည် /paˑj/ is the only one which can be used to link both clauses and phrases or words, though it most often functions in phrase. Some of these connectives can function independently and some are used in pairs or with adverbs, for instance, ဘံန်…စီ /bən…ci/, ဘီ…စ်မ် /bi…cəm/, ဆဲ့…ဘိုဝ် /sɛh…bɤ/, ကုန်…စ်မ် /kʌn…cəm/, ဆဲ့ဒိန်…ထဲင် /sɛh.din…tʰɛŋ/, ဟိုဝ်…ဟိုဝ် /huɯ…huɯ/, ပည်…ပည် /paˑj…paˑj/, ပည်…ဂါရ် /paˑj…gar/, etc.

According to the position where they function, GP (SL) connectives can be divided into two groups. One group takes the position before SUBJECT of a clause; one group takes the position after SUBJECT. Here is a summary of connectives regarding their position.

Clause Connectives					
Before SUBJECT			After SUBJECT		
Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.	Wordform	Gloss	Log. Rel.
ဘံန် /bən/	'because'	causation	ကုန် /kʌn/	'if, if only'	condition
ဆေညာ /se.ɲa/	'because'	causation	ဂိုပ် /gɤp/	'even'	progress
ကောပ် /kɔp/	'because'	causation	ကုန် /kʌn/	'when'	chronological
ခိုည် /kʰɤj/	'as'	causation	စီ /ci/	'then'	chronological
ကောည်လိုည် /kɔj.loj/	'but'	contrast	စင် /cəŋ/	'then'	chronological
မိုဝ်းဂိုဝ် /mɤh.gɤ/	'but'	contrast	စင်ပဲန် /cəŋ.pɛn/	'finally'	chronological
မိုဝ်းလိုည် /mɤh.loj/	'but'	contrast	စ်မ် /cəm/	GEN	generalization
မိုဝ်းလိုည်ဂိုဝ် /mɤh.loj.gɤ/	'but'	contrast	ပည် /paˑj/	'and'	coordination
ကုန်မိုဝ်း /kʌn.mɤh/	'in case of'	contrast	ဘိ /bi/	'despite'	concession
ခိုည်လာ, /kʰɤj.laɣ/	'as if'	analogy	ဘိုည် /bɤj/	'even though'	concession
ကြိုည် /krɤj/	'not yet'	chronological	စ်မ် /cəm/	'however'	concession
ဘံန် /bən/	'after'	chronological			
စီပဲန် /ci.pɛn/	'finally'	chronological			
ဆဲ့ /sɛh/	'not only'	progress			
ဆဲ့ဒိန် /sɛh.din/	'besides'	progress			

9.2.2. Particle (prt)

Particles are words that attach to word or phrase, referring to certain additional meaning or structural relations. They are belong to a special kind of function word that have the most dependency in function and the less lexical meaning. There are several kinds of particles in GP (SL).[96]

9.2.2.1. Structural Particle (prt-struc)

Structural particles are words that function mainly for building a grammatical structure, especially in word formation. There are several structural particles in GP (SL), among which ကုံရ် /kʌr/ and ကုံန် /kʌn/ are relatively widely used to form nouns and verbs. ပုံန် /pʌn/ is a causative verbalizer, which turns a word to a transitive verb. It also is a nominalizer by adding a meaning of 'something good for' to a verb. ရ /ra·/ is nominalizers which make a verb become a noun that 'something for' that verb. ကုံရ် /kʌr/ adds reciprocity to a transitive verb and form an intransitive verb. It is also used to be a nominalizer, turning a verb to a noun without changing its basic meaning.[97] နိင် /nəŋ/ and ပါည် /paj/ are used in forming numeral compound. နိင် /nəŋ/ links the last two places in a large number; ပါည် /paj/ links the ten thousand's place and the thousand's place.[98]

9.2.2.2. Nominal Particle (prt-n)

Nominal particles are words that function with nouns for giving additional meaning. There are three main kinds of nominal particles in GP (SL), namely noun classifier and dual/plural marker.

Noun classifiers (nclass) are nouns themselves, only they are attached preceedingly to other morphemes in noun formation to mark the classification of the new nouns. That is, noun classifer, if any, is the most front part of a noun. Here are some common noun classifiers in GP (SL).

Noun Classifier					
စဝ်[99]	/ca·w/	honorific (religious)	ကာ	/ka/	fish
ခုန်	/kʰun/	honorific (royal, male)	ဆီမ်	/sim/	bird
နာင်	/naŋ/	honorific (royal, female)	အရုံ့	/ʔa·rʌʔ/	frog
တာ	/ta/	honorific (person, male)	ဒါ့	/vaɤ/	insect
ယာ	/ja/	honorific (person, female)	တုိင်	/tɯŋ/	tree
ကွုံန်	/kwən/	young (person, animal), small (thing)	ဟေ	/he/	arbour
အီ	/ʔi/	female (young, name)	ပ္လေ	/ple/	fruit or fruit-like
လုံပ်	/lʌp/	direction			

GP (SL) uses the third person dual and plural pronouns ဂါရ် /gar/ and ဂဲ /gɛ/ as dual and plural markers (plmk) respectively. It is not grammatically necessary but makes the expression clearer. It is attached at the end of the nominal form which it modifies.

9.2.2.3. Verbal Particle (prt-v)

There are three verbal particles, မ္ဂိဝ်း /mɤh/, ဘီ /bi/, and ညာ /ɲa/, in GP to give emphasis to the action realized by the verb or the proposition expressed by the clause. မ္ဂိဝ်း /mɤh/ can be attached at the beginning or the end of a clause, or be inserted before the verbal structure of a clause, embedded clause, or referential noun phrase, etc. to give emphasis on what follows it. ဘီ /bi/ and ညာ /ɲa/ can only be put before the verbal structure of a clause or embedded clause. Here are some examples.

---

[96] Among GP (SL) particles, some may be considered as clitics, which is phonologically bounded but is a grammatical word. For easy reading, it is not discussed separately in this grammar.

[97] For more examples, see section 8.2. Derivative.

[98] For more examples, see section 8.3.6. Numeral Compound.

[99] It is a Shan loan word but widely used among GP (SL) people.

WSR2-5.4

မ္လိုင်း	အိုန်	လေး	တဲ	လေး	ကိုတ်	ဒေ	တ	မိ
mɤh	ʔʌn	leh	tɛ	leh	kɤt	de	taˑ	mi
YES-emp	3S	move down	conceive	move down	be born	SELF	DIR	2S
prt-v	prn-per	VP				prn-refl		RNP
cs-emp	SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL				POST-C. MODIFIER		CL.MODIFIER

Surely he will come down to be conceived in you.

WSR2-5.4

ဆဒေါ	အိုဝ်	မ္လိုင်း	ဆဒေါ	အော	မ္လိုင်း
saˑdɔ	ʔɯ	mɤh	saˑdɔ	ʔɔ	mɤh
jacket	this	be	jacket	1S	YES-emp
NP		vlink	NP		prt-v
SUBJECT		cs-emphasis	COMPLEMENT		CS-EMPHASIS

This jacket is really my jacket

WSR2-29.13

ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊	မ္လိုင်း	ဟွည်း	က	ဗီရ်	ယင့်
hɔj.blɔɣ	mɤh	hwaˑjɣ	ka	vir	jʌʔ
white water-snail n	YES-emp	FINISH	NEG	return (from)	SURE
	prt-v	VP			prt-mood
SUBJECT	cs-emphasis	PREDICATE			cs-mood

Water-snail would not go back for sure.

WSR2-48.4

ဂဲ	ဘီ	ဂွည်	လုပ်လေးဆင်	ကုန်ဒီ	ကုင်	ပီ	အော့
gɛ	bi	gwaˑj	lʌp.leh.sa.ŋi	kʌn.di	kuŋ	pi	ʔeʔ
3P	EMP	dwell, stay	east	middle	country	that	FINISH
prn-per	prt-v	vi	RNP				prt-mood
SUBJECT	cs-emphasis	PREDICATE	CLAUSE MODIFIER				cs-mood

They live in the east of the downtown.

Pork23.3

ကွန်နာင်	ဒီန်	ညာ	ဟံရ်	ပွတ်	ပည်	တို
gwən.naŋ	din	ŋa	hər	pwət	paˑj	to
princess	that	HAPPEN-emp	tremble	WITH PURPOSE	all	body
NP		prt-v	VP		QP	
SUBJECT		cs-emphasis	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

The whole body of the princess trembled.

These verbal particles give a realistic, matter-of-fact nuance to the verb or clause that show the subject is being or doing in a particular way relating to the clause personally. Consider these two pairs of examples. With the verbal particles, the expressions are the speakers' reports from experience; without the verbal particles, the expressions become a general description.

ဒေင်	မ္လိုင်း	ဆင် ည်
deŋ	mɤh	saˑŋaj
road	YES-emp	(distance) far from
n	prt-v	adj

LT: The road is far (the speaker is going the journey)

ဒေင်	ဆင်ည်
deŋ	saˑŋaj
road	(distance) far from
n	adj

LT: a far road (the speaker doesn't go the journey, only comments it)

ကတဲ	ညာ	ကုာ်ရၢ်ဂါႋ
ka·tɛ	ɲa	kʌr.gah
ground, land	HAPPEN-emp	crack
N	prt-v	vi

The ground cracked (the speaker saw it)

ကတဲ	ကုာ်ရၢ်ဂါႋ
ka·tɛ	kʌr.gah
ground, land	crack
n	vi

The ground cracked (the speaker didn't see it, only talked about a general phenomenon)

It is also noteworthy that these verbal particles can be used alone or with demonstrative pronoun which indicates to give emphasis to a referent. However, when there is a demonstrative pronoun in used, there should be a verbal particles to echo the emphasis. Compare these four examples. The first three are correct but the last one is wrong.

Est 3.3	အုၣ်	ရုရ်	ပွဲၣည်	အီဝ်	မ့ဝ်ႋ	ပုၤ်	ဘီ	အုၣ်	ဝည်	ကုၣ်ရဒၢ်ရၡၖ	ဆုဆာ	ဒိည်ႋဒိုည်ႋ
	ʔʌn	rʌr	plɔj	ʔɯ	mɤh	pun	bi	ʔʌn	gwa·j	ku·ŋ.ra·dən.ra·kʰrɛ	su.sa	dojɤ.dojɤ
	3S	do	feast	this	YES-emp	for	people	Emb-SUBJ	dwell	fortress	Susa	all
	prn-per	vt	n	dem	prt-v	RNP						

He made this feast for all the people who lived in the fortress of Susa.

Est 3.3*	အုၣ်	ရုရ်	ပွဲၣည်	မ့ဝ်ႋ	ပုၤ်	ဘီ	အုၣ်	ဝည်	ကုၣ်ရဒၢ်ရၡၖ	ဆုဆာ	ဒိည်ႋဒိုည်ႋ
	ʔʌn	rʌr	plɔj	mɤh	pun	bi	ʔʌn	gwa·j	ku·ŋ.ra·dən.ra·kʰrɛ	su.sa	dojɤ.dojɤ
	3S	do	feast	YES-emp	for	people	Emb-SUBJ	dwell	fortress	Susa	all
	prn-per	vt	n	prt-v	RNP						

He made this feast for all the people who lived in the fortress of Susa.

Est 3.3*	အုၣ်	ရုရ်	ပွဲၣည်	ပုၤ်	ဘီ	အုၣ်	ဝည်	ကုၣ်ရဒၢ်ရၡၖ	ဆုဆာ	ဒိည်ႋဒိုည်ႋ
	ʔʌn	rʌr	plɔj	pun	bi	ʔʌn	gwa·j	ku·ŋ.ra·dən.ra·kʰrɛ	su.sa	dojɤ.dojɤ
	3S	do	feast	for	people	Emb-SUBJ	dwell	fortress	Susa	all
	prn-per	vt	n	RNP						

He made this feast for all the people who lived in the fortress of Susa.

Est 3.3*	အုၣ်	ရုရ်	ပွဲၣည်	အီဝ်	ပုၤ်	ဘီ	အုၣ်	ဝည်	ကုၣ်ရဒၢ်ရၡၖ	ဆုဆာ	ဒိည်ႋဒိုည်ႋ
	ʔʌn	rʌr	plɔj	ʔɯ	pun	bi	ʔʌn	gwa·j	ku·ŋ.ra·dən.ra·kʰrɛ	su.sa	dojɤ.dojɤ
	3S	do	feast	this	for	people	Emb-SUBJ	dwell	fortress	Susa	all
	prn-per	vt	n	dem	RNP						

He made this feast for all the people who lived in the fortress of Susa.

9.2.2.4. Mood Particle (prt-mood)

Mood particles are words that show mood. There are some mood particles function on clause. စိ /ci·/ is used in imperative clauses and subjunctive clauses to show politeness.[100] ဧအ္ /ʔeʔ/ shows a request, agreement, or truth. ယာ့် /jʌʔ/ shows certainty. ယိ့ /jo/ shows a guess or suspicion. အဲႋ /ʔɛh/ shows certainty in a question. These particles are put at the end of a clause that they can be considered final particles also. Usually, they are used individually; occasionally, they are used in combination.

---

[100] စိ /ci·/ is also widely used in negative indicative clauses to show politeness but is put after the verb.

Besides, there are some mood particles adding various nuances to the word before them with a bit of emphasis. They can be freely placed after noun, verb, adjective, quantifier phrase, and even clause. For instance, ဂုံဝ် /gɤ/ gives a shade of 'only;' လို့ည် /loj/, 'even;' etc.

Another mood particle, လှည် /l̥aˑj/, gives emphasis to the structure after it, such as quantifier phrase, referential noun phrase, nominal forms, and verbal forms, by a sense of '(not) even.' It functions in negative clauses.

9.2.2.5. Question Particle (prt-q)

Question particles are words that denote a yes-or-no question, for example, ကော /kɔ/ and ပည် /paˑj/. ဟ္တီဝ် /hɯ/ is ued to denote the options in a selective sentence in form of yes-or-no question. ကာမှိဝ်း /ka.mɤh/ is used to form rhetorical yer-or-no questions, showing surprise.[101]

9.2.3. Interjection (interj)

Interjections are words that express exclamation or address someone. They are different from general function words and belong to a special word class that they do not take part in clause structure and can function on their own like a clause. They are quite freely written according to speakers' articulation or preference. Sometimes, they are pronounced with a high rising pitch and marked by the diacritics ◌း /ʌ/. Different interjections express different emotions. Here are some common GP (SL) interjections.

Interjections		
Wordform		Emotion Expressed
ဟာ	/ha/	be pleased, happy, joyful
ဒဲး	/dɛʌ/	come to realize
ဟ္တုိဝ်	/hɤ/	be surprised
ဟေး	/heʌ/	be surprised
ဟား	/haʌ/	be surprised as something expected does not happen
အာလံရ်လံရ်	/ʔa.lər.lər/	be surprised with something in a huge amount
အာမေမေ	/ʔa.me.me/	be surprised with something in a huge amount
အာမာမာ	/ʔa.ma.ma/	be surprised with something in a huge amount
အာလို့လို့	/ʔa.lo.lo/	be surprised with something in a huge amount
အာယော်ယော်း	/ʔa.jɔ.jɔʌ/	be surprised with something very big in size
အာလို့းအဲး	/ʔaˑloh.ʔɛh/	be surprised with something happening accidentally
အာလို့း၊ အာလို့း	/ʔaˑloh/ /ʔaˑloʌ/	be surprised and admire
အဲး	/ʔɛʌ/	be surprised and admire
ဟည့်	/haˑjʔ/	be surprised and not satisfied
ဟ္တုိဝ်း	/hɯʌ/	have courage, be dare to do something
အား	/ʔaʌ/	show a high esteem of somebody (but may be disagree or dislike in heart)
ဆော်း	/sʌh/	get attention
အို့း	/ʔoʌ/	get attention, address audience
အ္တုိဝ်း	/ʔɤʌ/	get attention, address audience; 'yes!'
ဒီး	/diʌ/	pity
ဝိ့ည်အဲး	/woj.ʔɛh/	pity, be sorry to (less)
အို့း	/ʔoʌ/	pity, be sorry to (much)
အော်း	/ʔɔʌ/	pity, come to realize, be surprised and unsatisfied by the result

---

[101] For examples, see section 6.2. Interrogative Clause.

အိူၣ်ည်း	/ʔɯɟʌ/	console, comfort
အလာ፥	/ʔaˑlah/	be jealous, be envious
မော፥	/mɔʌ/	'where?!'

9.2.4. Onomatopoeic Word (onom)

Onomatopoeic words imitate natural sounds of the things that they are describing or representing. Like interjections, they are different from general function words and belong to a special word class that they do not take part in clause structure and can function on their own like a clause. They are freely written according to the speakers' hearing and preference. For example, ဇိၣ်ဇိၣ် /ɟin.ɟin/ is used to describe the sound of car.

9.3. Multiple Word Class

Some GP (SL) words have more than one grammatical functions with closely related meanings. They are called polysemants, belonging to multiple word class. Verb-noun double word class is the most common in GP (SL). Here are some examples of double and triple word class with different combination.

Verb-Noun Double Word Class					
Wordform	Verb	Noun	Wordform	Verb	Noun
ကဆီး /kaˑsih/	'(skin) crack'	'beauty spot'	ဆၣ်မ် /saˑnʌm/	'cure'	'medicine'
ကတံမ် /kaˑtəm/	'lay egg'	'egg'	တာင် /taŋ/	'carry (by animal)'	'things carried on mule's back'
ကွဲတ် /kwət/	'serve (duty)'	'burden'	ဒၣ် /dən/	'obstruct'	'stumbling block'
ကွံၣ် /kwən/	'give birth'	'child'	နဲ /nɛ/	'own'	'possession'
ကိၣ် /kin/	'curse, swear'	'curse'	ပွိၣ် /pɯn/	'spread out'	'floor'
ကုရိစ /kʌr.cuˑ/	'gather'	'meeting'	ဖွိမ် /pʰɤm/	'breathe'	'breath'
ကုရိစ်ကုရိမ်ၣ် /kʌr.cu.kʌr.mon/	'discuss'	'meeting'	ဘူ /bu/	'suck (milk)'	'breast'
ကုရိတူး /kʌr.tuh/	'encounter'	'experience'	ယွိရိငေါ် /jɤr.ŋɔ/	'winnow'	'winnow'
ကုရိထေငိ /kʌr.tʰeŋ/	'dispute'	'dispute'	ရခြိမ် /raˑkʰrum/	'move sth. down'	'bottom'
ခုရိ /kʰur/	'blow'	'wind, air'	ဟာပ် /hap/	'eat 'curry''	'curry'
ငဲ /ŋɛ/	'speak, greet'	'language, word'	အုရိး /ʔur/	'smell'	'odour'

Other Verbal Double/Triple Word Class				
Wordform	Verb	Aux v	Adv	Ref n
ဒၢ် /dʌʔ/	'stop, remain'	aspect (remain)		
ဟွည်း /hwaˑjɤ/	'finish'	aspect (finish)		'already (time)'
ပွဲတ် /pwət/	'move out'		manner (momentarily, done away)	
ပေါ် /pɔ/	'arrive'		manner (achieved)	

ရောတ် /rɔt/	'reach'	manner (achieved)
ပဲတ် /pɛt/	'abandon'	manner (at once, done away)
ဗိရ် /vir/	'return (from)'	manner (in turn)
ထင် /tʰɛŋ/	'add, fill'	manner (again), scope (also)
အွဲရ် /ʔwər/	'lead (in front)'	'in front of'

Adjective-Noun Double Word Class

Wordform	Adjective	Noun
ကွဲန်ဟျာ /kwən.hja/	'old'	'old people'
ကှိင် /koŋ/	'hollow'	'hole, cavity'
ကေန် /ken/	'poor'	'hardship, distress'
ကှန်ဒှင် /kʌn.duˑŋ/	'flat'	'plain'
ငါညအဲပ် /ŋaj.ʔəp/	'blind'	'blind people'
ပွိုင် /plaŋ/	'bright'	'light'
ရှိင် /rɛŋ/	'strong'	'power, strength'

Adjective-Adverb Double Word Class

Wordform	Adjective	Adverb
ကျကျနန /kjaˑ.kjaˑ.naˑ.naˑ/	'excellent'	'very well'
ဒိုည် /dojɤ/	'be used up'	'completely'
လ /laˑ/	'good'	'well, whole'

Noun-Measure Double Word Class

Wordform	Noun	Measure
ကာ /kaɤ/	'branch'	UNIT(branch,flower)
ဆငီ /saˑŋi/	'sun'	UNIT (time, day)
ဆှိမ် /sɤm/	'night'	UNIT (time, night)
တှို /to/	'body'	UNIT(animal,insect)
တှိုင် /tɯŋ/	'pole'	UNIT(plant)

Noun-Particle Double Word Class

Wordform	Noun	Noun classifier
စဝ် /caˑw/	'master, monk'	honorific
တာ /ta/	'grandfather'	masculine
ယာ /ja/	'grandmother'	feminine
ကာ /ka/	'fish'	fish
ကွဲန် /kwən/	'child'	young (person, animal)

Noun-Connective Word Class

Wordform	Ref. Noun	Cl. Connective
ကြိုည် /krɤj/	'before'	chronological
ကောပ် /kɔp/	'reason'	causative
ဆဲး /sɛh/	'far side over a hill'	progressive
ကှန် /kʌn/	'at the time of'	chronological
ဒင် /dəŋ/	'during'	chronological
မော /mɔ/	'till'	generalizative

Pronoun-Adjective Double Word Class		
Wordform	Pronoun	Adjective
ဒိဉ်ႇဒိဉ်ႇ /dojɤ.dojɤ/	'all'	'all, every'
ပုၚ်ရၚ်ဒ္ဒ /pʌr.di/	'some'	'some'

Some words have the same form or spelling but different meanings and grammatical functions. If the different meanings are not closely related, they are not multiple word class but homonyms. For example, ဆၞတ် /sut/ means 'ask somebody to do something (v.)' and 'mosquito net (n.).' Grammatically, it functions as a verb and a noun; semantically, these two meanings are not closely related. Therefore, ဆၞတ် /sut/ 'ask somebody to do something (v.)' and ဆၞတ် /sut/ 'mosquito net (n.)' are not double word class but homonyms. This is also true for these examples.

	Homonym 1		Homonym 2	
ဆူ /su/	v	'be sick, be hurt'	n	'grandchild'
စိ /ci/	v	'inlay'	conn	chronological
ခုန် /kʰun/	v	'run'	prt-n	honorific
ကမ် /kəm/	adj	'brown'	n	'pencil, pen'
စမ် /cəm/	n	'glass'	conn	concessive
ကာ /ka/	n	'fish'	neg	'not'

Here is another more complex situation. တၚ် /taŋ/ means 'carry by animal (v.)' and 'things carried on mule's back (n.)' that it is double word class. It is also a referential noun 'on account of,' but semantically does not closely relate to 'carry' or 'things carried on mule's back'.[102] Hence, the referential noun တၚ် /taŋ/ is not included in တၚ် /taŋ/ multiple word class but becomes a homonym. This is also true for these examples.

	Homonym 1 (Double Word Class)		Homonym 2	Homonym 3
တၚ် /taŋ/	v 'carry'	n 'things carried on mule's back'	n-ref 'on account of'	
ဆန္နမ် /saˑnʌm/	v 'cure'	n 'medicine'	n 'year'	
ကောပ် /kɔp/	n-ref 'because of'	conn causative	n 'horsefly, gadfly'	
က္ုန် /kʌn/	n-ref 'at the time of'	conn chronological	conn conditional	n 'mother-in-law'

Table 22: Summary of GP (SL) Word Classes

Word Class Set	**Word Class Group**	**Word Class**	**Word Sub-Class**		
Content Word		Noun	Common n		
			Collective n		
			Proper n		
			Abstract n		
			Temporal n		
			Spatial n		

---

[102] Though it may be considered as 'carrying the reason of explanation for (something),' this extended meaning is still of a homonym.

Word Class Set	Word Class Group	Word Class	Word Sub-Class		
		Referential noun	Temporal ref n		
			Spatial ref n		
			Logical ref n		
			Proximity ref n		
			Directive ref n		
			Comparative ref n		
			Sequential ref n		
		Verb	Action v	Transitive v	
			Experiential v	Intransitive v	Passive v
			Existential v	Linking v	
			Mental v	Directive v	
			Command v		
			Judgement v		
			Capability v		
		Adjective	Qualitative adj		
			Quantitative adj		
			Stative adj		
		Auxiliary verb	Aspect aux v		
			Capability aux v		
			Intention aux v		
		Adverbs	Degree adv		
			Scope adv		
			Manner adv		
			Mood adv		
			Negator		
			Clause adv		
	Determiner	Quantifier	Numeral	cardinal	coefficient place
				ordinal	
			Indefinite quan		
			Interrogative quan		
		Measure	Individual meas		
			Collective meas		
			Metrologic meas		
			Temporal meas		
			Action meas		
		Demonstrative			
	Proform	Pronouns	Personal prn	reflexive per prn	
			Demonstrative prn		
			Indefinite prn		
			Embedded prn		
		Interrogative			
Function Word		Connective	Clause conn		
			Phrase conn		
		Particle	Structural prt		
			Nominal prt	noun classifier	
				dual/plural marker	
			Verbal prt		
			Mood prt		
			Question prt		
	Special function word	Interjection			
		Onomatopoeic word			

10 *Extension of Word*

In GP (SL), a phrase, as an extension of word, can be illustrated in one of these formulae, summarising its possible elements and configurations.

Noun Phrase = $P2^n$: conn-ph, NP(non-SM)
    + P1: meas
    + C^n: n, prn-emb, prn-per, NP(non-SM)
    + F1: prn-per, meas
    + $F2^n$: n, n-ref, adj, NP, RNP, VP, EmCl
    + F3: prn-per
    + F4: prt-n
    + F5: adj-quan, QP
    + F6: dem
Referential Noun Phrase =   C: n-ref
    + F1: n, prn-per, prn-refl, NP, VP, QP, EmCl
    + F2: dem
Apposition = C^n: n, NP
Quantifier Phrase = C^n: [1. quan-indef, num.card + 2. meas, n]
    + F1: adj
    + F2: dem
Verbal Phrase = P^n: n, prn-refl, [1. aux-asp, QP-n + 2. neg + 3. aux-intent, aux-cap, vi-pass, ဘၠှၣ် /bɤn/, ဘဲ /bɛ/], conn-ph
    + C^n: vi, vt, vdir, adj
    + F^n: n, NP, vdir, VP(SP), prn-refl, adv, ပွံတ် /pwət/, အ့ၣ် /ʔun/, ပဲတ် /pɛt/, ရောတ် /rɔt/, ပေါ /pɔ/, ဗီရဲ /vir/, ကွံၣ် /kləŋ/
Verb Chain = C^n: [1. vi, vt, dir + 2. vi, vt]

GP (SL) joins together two or more words, including simple words, derivatives, and compounds, and forms phrases. Usually, at least one of them is a compound or a connective is involved. In view of the function in a clause, there are two kinds of phrases. They are nominal phrase and non-nominal phrase, that is verbal phrase.

10.1. Nominal Phrase
Nominal phrases include phrases having similar grammatical functions as nouns do and those functioning with nouns. There are three main types, including noun phrase, referential noun phrase, and quantifier phrase.

10.1.1. Noun Phrase (NP)
A noun phrase is basically composed of a noun followed by pronoun, noun, noun phrase, quantifier phrase, adjective, demonstrative, embedded clause, etc. It functions like a noun and can fill the position of SUBJECT, COMPLEMENT, ATTRIBUTIVE, CLASUE MODIFIER, and RECAP. For example,

M44-1.1

ဖျိုရ်	အူ	တို့	တၟဝ်ႏ	ငါမ်ပိုႏ
pʰjer	ʔu	to	tɤh	ŋam.poh
bee	one	UNIT(animal,insect)	take	nectar
n	QP		vt	n
NP				
SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT

There was a bee taking nectar.

WS59.2

အော	မ့ဉ်ႏ	ညို့	ရလေး	မီ
ʔɔ	mɤh	ŋoh	ra·leh	mi
1S	be	really, truly	husband	2S
prn-per	VP		n	prn-per
			NP	
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT	

I'm really your husband.

WS24.4

မည်	ဟဏ့်	ထပ်	ရကိုရ်ဗိုင်ည်
ma·j	hʌʔ	tʰap	ra·kʌr.vɤj
NEG(IMP)	move up	level	area above
neg	vdir	n	n-ref
		NP	
PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

Don't go upstairs. [spatial location]

WS23.1

ဆငီ	ဒီန်	ယာဖည်	ကာ	ဂွည်
sa·ŋi	din	ja.pʰaj	ka	gwa·j
day(s)	that	ogress	NEG (IND)	be present
n	dem	n	neg	vi
NP				
CLAUSE MODIFIER		SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.

That day, the ogress was not there.

WS28.3

အော	လာ်း	မေန်	အူယေန်	မာ	အော
ʔɔ	lʌh	men	ʔu.jen	ma	ʔɔ
1S	move to (go)	look	garden	mother	1S
prn-per	VP		n	n	prn-per
				NP	
			CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
			NP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

I'll go and see my mother's garden

WS 9.6

ကွန်ꩻ	အာည်	အိုင်	ဒဲ့း	ဘီ	လောင်	ပဲတ်	အꩻန်	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
kwən	ʔaj	ʔɯ	dɛh	bi	loŋ	pɛt	ʔʌn	ɟɔm	ʔom
son,daughter	1D(incl.)	this	IMPER	people	float	AT ONCE	3S	along	water
N	prn-per	dem	vt	n	vi	adv	prn-per	RNP	
NP									
			PREDICATE C.	COMPLE.					
			Cl.1						
RECAP				SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MOD.	COMPLE.	CL.MODIFIER	
							Cl.2		

Ask the people to float our child down the stream.

Besides, a measure can follow a noun to form a special noun phrase which is usually modified by another noun phrase with an embedded clause to form a larger noun phrase functioning in a clause or a

referential noun phrase.[103] This special kind of noun phrases expresses the nuance of meaning in particularity. A measure can also precede a noun phrase to show particularity, only the resultant noun phrase can function in clause without a modifier . Here are two examples.

အော	လာ်း	ရၢ်း	မိဝ့	တိ	ပၢ်န	ဆိ်န	ဘိုန အော
ʔɔ	lʌh	raɹ	muuʔ	to	pʌn	sin	bɤn ʔɔ
1S	go	choose	ox	UNIT(animal)	Emb-OBJ	DESIRE	get 1S
prn-per	VP		n	meas			EmCl
			NP		NP		
			HEAD		MODIFIER		
			NP				

I go to choose the ox which I want to get. (the speaker has in mind particular criteria for choosing the ox)

Est 27.5	ကူ	ဘီနပ်ဘီၣ်ုၢ်န	အၣ်န	ဂဲ	ဂၢ်ရ	ပၢ်နလဲ	အၣ်န	စိင	ဗီရ	ဒါ်း	တ	အၣ်န
	ku	bi.nəp.bi.ŋjən	ʔʌn	gɛ	gar	pʌn.lɛ	ʔʌn	cəŋ	vir	dah	ta	ʔʌn
	UNIT(person)	wise man	3S	prt-n	and	wife	3S	RESULT	return	say	DIR	3S
	meas	NP			conn-ph	NP		conn-cl	VP			RNP
	NP											
	NP											

His certain wise men and his wife then said to him,...

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building a simple noun phrase.[104]

Table 23: Basic Structure of Noun Phrase

NP		
meas	n	n, n-ref, prn-per, meas, adj, RNP, VP, EmCl, prt-n, adj-quan, QP, dem

A noun phrase is composed of at least one nominal form, that is noun or pronoun, and another nominal form or non-nominal form with or without certain connectives. In view of structural relationship between parts of a noun phrase, there are three types of noun phrases in GP (SL), that is, coordination (COOR), head-modifier (HM), and supplement-main (SM).

10.1.1.1. Coordination (COOR) Noun Phrase

COOR noun phrases are those whose main parts are related to each other and put side by side on an equal ranking with or without connectives. Main parts are in nominal forms. Usually, there are two main parts and they are related but neither synonymic or antonymic. Very often, the connectives is reduplicated before each main part. Here are some examples,

General COOR Noun Phrases						
Noun Phrase		Link	Main 1		Link	Main 2
ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော,ပည်လဲဂဲ /hɔj.blɔɤ paˑj lɛ gɛ/	'White Water-snail and the carts'		ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော, /hɔj.blɔɤ/	'White Water-snail'	ပည် /paˑj/	လဲဂဲ /lɛ gɛ/ 'the carts'
ကုန်မိဂၢ်ရမၢမိ /kun mi gar ma mi/	'your father and mother'		ကုန်မိ /kun mi/	'your father'	ဂၢ်ရ /gar/	မၢမိ /ma mi/ 'your mother'
ပည်ဂြူပည်ဂြိုမ် /paˑj gru paˑj grɤm/	'all things'	ပည် /paˑj/	ဂြူ /gru/	'clothes'	ပည် /paˑj/	ဂြိုမ် /grɤm/ 'thing'

---

[103] See also section 11.2. Phrase-in-Phrase Embedding.
[104] For a detailed discussion on order of different grammatical forms in a noun phrase, see section 5.4. ATTRIBUTIVE.

It is noteworthy that the shown examples ကွန်**မိ**ဂါရ်မာ**မိ** /kun **mi** gar ma **mi**/ 'your father and mother,' the personal pronoun repeats after ကွန် /kun/ 'father' and မာ /ma/ ' mother.' It is necessary to reduplicate the personal pronoun to show kinship or ownership of each referent or item in a COOR phrase. Otherwise, the kinship or ownership of each referent or item will mean different. For example, ကွန်ဂါရ်မာ**မိ** /kun gar ma **mi**/ means 'someone's (most probably, the speaker's) father and your mother' that the two persons are not a couple.

There are also COOR noun phrases composed of more than two main parts. Here are two examples.

COOR Noun Phrases					
ဝါင်အိုမ် ဝါင်ငရ် ဝါင်ခုရ် /vaŋ.ʔom vaŋ.ŋər vaŋ.kʰur/ 'water court, fire court, and wind court'					
Link	Main 1	Link	Main 2	Link	Main 3
	ဝါင်အိုမ် n		ဝါင်ငရ် n		ဝါင်ခုရ် n
	/vaŋ.ʔom/		/vaŋ.ŋər/		/vaŋ.kʰur/
	'water court'		'fire court'		'wind court'
ပည်အမှုအမာတ်ဟော်ခံမ်ဂဲ ပည်နှာင်ဟော်ခံမ်ဂဲပီ ပည်ကွိန်ဝါအိုန်ဂဲ /paˑj ʔaˑmu.ʔaˑmat hɔ.kʰəm gɛ paˑj naŋ.hɔ.kʰəm gɛ pi paˑj kwən.va ʔʌn gɛ/ 'the king's ministers, princesses, and children'					
Link	Main 1	Link	Main 2	Link	Main 3
ပည် conn-ph	အမှုအမာတ်ဟော်ခံမ်ဂဲ NP	ပည် conn-ph	နှာင်ဟော်ခံမ်ဂဲပီ NP	ပည် conn-ph	ကွိန်ဝါအိုန်ဂဲ NP
/paˑj/	/ʔaˑmu.ʔaˑmat hɔ.kʰəm gɛ/	/paˑj/	/naŋ.hɔ.kʰəm gɛ pi/	/paˑj/	/kwən.va ʔʌn gɛ/
	'the king's ministers'		'the king's princesses'		'his children'

GP (SL) can have several related nouns in a row without any connective, especially to give a list of things. Usually, in a list of things, the more general items are put first, followed by the more specific ones. The resultant phrase is to express the 'whole' kind of the specific things listed. Here are two examples.

WSR2-44.4-5	လှည် l̥aˑj	ရဟော်မ်ရဒါ raˑhɔm.raˑda	ကွိုလာ၊ klo.laɤ	စလုင်ဆလော၊ caˑluŋ.saˑlɔɤ	လိုည် loj	ဂါရ် gar	ကာ ka	ယွိုဝ် jɤ
	EMP-(not)even	family appliance	cooking utensil	plates and bowls	EMP-even	3D	NEG (IND)	possess
	prt-mood	n-coll NP	n-coll	n-coll	prt-mood	prn-per	neg	vt

LT: They did not have even eating utensis, cooking utensil, or plates and bowls.
FT: They had nothing at home.

Est3.5	ဒဲ၊ dɛh	ဘီ bi	ရတျာင် raˑtjəŋ	ဘိုည်ခြီရ် boj.kʰrir	ဆလော၊ရှိန် saˑlɔɤ.rʌn	လည် laˑj		နဲ nɛ
	give	people	drinking vessel	golden cup	silver bowl	various (different)		kind
	vt	n	n-coll NP	n	n	QP		

Give people various kinds of drinking utensis, such as golden cups and silver bowls

In a similar way, GP (SL) can put side by side two compounds which have the same structure to form a COOR noun phrase. The resultant noun phrase obtains a comprehensive meaning from the combination of its parts. For example, ကွန်ချုတ် /kun.djət/ means 'father's younger brother' and ကွန်အာန် /kun.ʔan/ means 'father's elder brother.' Both of them are HM nominal compounds. When they put together, a generic term formed, that is ကွန်ချုတ်ကွန်အာန် /kun.djət kun.ʔan/, which means 'uncles.'

10.1.1.2. Head-Modifier (HM) Noun Phrase
HM noun phrases are those whose parts are in head-modifier relationship. The first part is head which is modified or determined by the second part, modifier. That is, the head fills the position of CENTRAL and

the modifier fills the position of ATTRIBUTIVE in the noun phrase. The head should be a nominal form, either a noun or a pronoun, and it can take more than one modifier in form of adjective, personal pronoun, noun phrase, referential noun phrase, adjective phrase, verb phrase, quantifier phrase, or demonstrative. Sometimes, there is a connective between the head and the modifier. Here are some examples.

HM Noun Phrases

Noun Phrase		Head			Modifier(s)		
ပန်မတြိုင် /pa·nʌm briŋ/	'ant mound'	ပန်မ /pa·nʌm/	n	'mound'	တြိုင် /briŋ/	n	'ant'
ရန်မတိ့ဇိုင် /ra·ɲim ti.ɹɤŋ/	'finger nail and toe nail'	ရန်မ /ra·ɲim/	n	'nail'	တိ့ဇိုင် /ti.ɹɤŋ/	n-coll.	'hands and feet'
အိုမ်ငင်ဆိန် /ʔom.ŋəŋ sin/	'cold boiled water'	အိုမ်ငင် /ʔom.ŋəŋ/	n	'cold water'	ဆိန် /sin/	adj	'ripe, cooked'
ဟာရလၢ်ႈရဇင် /ha ra·lʌh.ra·veŋ/	'toilet'	ဟာ /ha/	n	'place'	ရလၢ်ႈရဇင် /ra·lʌh.ra·veŋ/	n	'to come and go'
အိုမ်တလော့ /ʔom ta·lɔɤ/	'spring'	အိုမ် /ʔom/	n	'water'	တလော့ /ta·lɔɤ/	RNP	'in valley'
ဘီတုည်ကာ /bi toj ka/	'fisherman'	ဘီ /bi/	n	'man'	တုည်ကာ /toj ka/	VP	'catching fish'
ကွန်အောဂါရအၢရကူပီ /kwən ʔɔ gar ʔar ku pi/	'my two children'	ကွန် /kwən/	n	'son or daughter'	အော /ʔɔ/	prn	1S
					ဂါရ /gar/	prt-n	DUAL
					အၢရကူ /ʔar ku/	QP	'two persons'
					ပီ /pi/	dem	'that'
ဟြိုင်ရှအူ့ရုရဒိန် /hruŋ.ru ʔu rur din/	'that one bamboo'	ဟြိုင်ရှ /hruŋ.ru/	n	'bamboo'	အူ့ရု /ʔu.rur/	QP	'one piece'
					ဒိန် /din/	dem.	'that'
ဂြုုဂြုမ်ပိုန်လေည်တာပီ /gru.grɤm pʌn lej ta pi/	'things which the old man traded'	ဂြုုဂြုမ် /gru.grɤm/	n	'things'	ပိုန်လေည်တာပီ /pʌn lej ta pi/	NP	'which the old man traded'
ပိုန်လေည်တာပီ /pʌn lej ta pi/	'which the old man traded'	ပိုန် /pʌn/	prn	'which'	လေည်တာပီ /lej ta pi/	EmCl	'the old man traded'

The modifier in a HM noun phrase can be a compound or a phrase that there can be more than one level of structural relationship. Here are some examples.

	ကတုမ်ပွ္ယွိုင်အိုမ် /ka·tʌm plɔŋ.ʔom/ (n) 'riverbed'		
L1	ကတုမ် /ka·tʌm/ (n) 'bottom'	ပွ္ယွိုင်အိုမ်/plɔŋ.ʔom/ (n) 'river'	
	HM Noun Phrase		
L 2		ပွ္ယွိုင် /plɔŋ/ (n) 'creek'	အိုမ် /ʔom/ (n) 'water'
		HM Compound	

	ကဇၢင်တိုင်ပေါမ် /ka·faŋ tuŋ.pɔm/ (n) 'kitchen'		
L 1	ကဇၢင် /ka·faŋ/ (n) 'fireplace'	တိုင်ပေါမ် /tuŋ.pɔm/ (v) 'cook rice'	
	HM Noun Phrase		
L2		တိုင် /tuŋ/ (vt) 'cook'	ပေါမ် /pɔm/ (n) 'rice'
		VO Compound	

	ကြင်ဟော်ပေါ်မ် /kruˑŋ hɔm pɔm/ (n) 'drum(biggest)'		
L 1	ကြင် /kruˑŋ/ (n) 'drum'	ဟော်ပေါ်မ် /hɔm pɔm/ (v) 'eat rice'	
	HM Noun Phrase		
L2		ဟော်မ် /hɔm/ (vt) 'eat'	ပေါ်မ် /pɔm/ (n) 'rice'
		VO Verb Phrase	

	ဂျူဂြိုမ်ပုံန်လေည်တာပီ /gru.gɤm pʌn lej ta pi/ (n) 'things which the old man traded'		
L1	ဂျူဂြိုမ် /gru.gɤm/ (n) 'things'	ပုံန်လေည်တာပီ /pʌn lej ta pi/ (NP) 'which the old man traded'	
	HM Noun Phrase		
L2		ပုံန် /pʌn/ (prn-emb) EmCl-OBJ	လေည်တာပီ /lej ta pi/ (EmCl) 'the old man traded'
		HM Noun Phrase	

	ကွုံန်ကူန်ချုံတ်ကူန်အာန် /kwən kun.djət kun.ʔan/ (n) 'nephew, neice'			
L 1	ကွုံန် /kwən/ (n) 'child'	ကူန်ချုံတ်ကူန်အာန် /kun.djət kun.ʔan/ (n) 'uncles'		
	HM Noun Phrase			
L2		ကူန်ချုံတ် /kun.djət/ (n) 'father's younger brother'	ကူန်အာန် /kun.ʔan/ (n) 'father's elder brother'	
		COOR Noun Phrase		
L3		ကူန် /kun/ (n) 'father'	ချုံတ် /djət/ (adj) 'small'	ကူန် /kun/ (n) 'father'	အာန် /ʔan/ (adj) 'big'
		HM Compound		HM Compound

10.1.1.3. Supplement-Main (SM) Noun Phrase

SM noun phrase is a special kind of noun phrase which is always have embedded noun phrase. Its parts are in supplement-main relationship. The first part is supplement which supplies information to explain the second part, which is main. SM noun phrase in GP (SL) only realizes entirety. The first part of supplement, which shows the whole, fills the position of ATTRIBUTIVE in the noun phrase; the second part of main, which shows the part, fills the position of CENTRAL in the noun phrase. Usually, the supplement is a non-SM noun phrase and the main is a pronoun, noun, or non-SM noun phrase. SM noun phrase usually fills the position of SUBJECT in a clause. Here is an example.

MG197	ဂါရ်	အာရ်	ကူ		အုၚ်န်	ချိုမ်
	gar	ʔar	ku		ʔʌn	kʰrʌm
	3D	two	UNIT(person)		3S	rich
	prn-per	QP			prn-per	vi
	NP					
	Supplement				Main	
	NP					
	SUBJECT				PREDICATE	

Out of two of them, he is rich.

Here are illustrations of grammatical forms building COOR noun phrase, HM noun phrase, and SM noun phrase.

Table 24: Sturcture of GP (SL) COOR Noun Phrase

COOR Noun Phrase					
(Link)	Main	(Link)	Main	(Link)	Main
conn-ph	n	conn-ph	n	conn-ph	n

Table 25: Structure of GP (SL) HM Noun Phrase

HM Noun Phrase						
Head	Modifier					
n, prn-emb	prn-per	n, n-ref, adj, NP, RNP, VP, EmCl	prn-per	prt-n	adj-quan, QP	dem

Table 26: Structure of GP (SL) SM Noun Phrase

SM Noun Phrase	
Supplement	Main
NP(non-SM)	n, prn-per, NP(non-SM)

10.1.2. Referential Noun Phrase (RNP)

In GP (SL), most of the time, a referential noun phrase functions in clause and fills the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER, showing spatial location, temporal location, temporal duration, recipient, audience, beneficiary, accompany, reason, degree, domain, comparison, etc. It is composed of a referential noun preceding a nominal form, including noun, pronoun, noun phrase, quantifier phrase, or embedded clause. The structure is similar to a HM noun phrase. Consider this example.

Couple8.8	ဂါရ်	စီ	လေး	ငှဳပ	ကုံရ်ဗျုံရ်	ရဂင်	ဒေ
	gar	ci	leh	ŋɤp	kʌr.vjər	ra·gəŋ	de
	3D	CHRON-temporal	move down	look at	surrounding of	hut (in the field)	SELF
	prn-per	conn-cl			n-ref	NP	
			VP		Head	Modifier	
					RNP		
	SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

They went down and looked around their hut.

It will sound incomplete if the modifier of the referential noun phrase ရဂင်ဒေ /ra·gəŋ de/ 'their hut' is omitted and only the referential noun ကုံရ်ဗျုံရ် /kʌr.vjər/ 'surrounding of' fills the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER in the clause. However, in colloquial GP (SL), when the context is clear enough, referential noun alone can function as CLAUSE MODIFIER. Consider this dialogue example.

A	ဟာမော	မီ	လဲး	B	ဟဲ့	ရဂိုရ်
	ha.mɔ	mi	lʌh		hʌʔ	ra·gor
	where?	CHRON -temporal	move to (go)		move up	upper side
	interrog	prn-per	vdir		vdir	n-ref
					PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

Where are you going? | | | | I'm going up.

Referential noun phrase can take embedded clause as its modifier. This is how it is distinct from connective. Here are some examples.

WSR19.2	ဒံင်	ကာ	ဝ္ည	မာ	အုံန်	ဆငီ	ဒိန်
	dəŋ	ka	gwa·j	ma	ʔʌn	sa·ŋi	din
	time during	NEG (IND)	be present	mother	3S	day	that
①	n-ref	VP	be present	NP	3S	NP	dem
②		PREDICATE C.		SUBJECT		CLAUSE MODIFIER	
③		EmCl					
④	Head	Modifier					Modifier
⑤	RNP						
⑥	CLAUSE MODIFIER						

On the day when his mother wasn't there,

①	ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊	ရာတ်	ဒေ	ဟၟ့်	မေန်	တ	ကို်ရ်ပို့ည်	ဂါင်	ဂါရ်	မာ	ဒေ
	hɔj.blɔɤ	rat	de	hʌʔ	men	taˑ	kuur.pɤj	gaŋ	gar	ma	de
	white water-snail	steal	SELF	move up	look	DIR	roof	house	3D	mother	SELF
	n	VP				n-ref	NP				

	Head	Modifier
	RNP	

SUBJECT	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER

White Water-snail secretly went up and look upstair of their house.

Couple15.1	ဘီရှုဘီဂါင်	ဂဲ	ညှုမ်	ခ္ယ့ည်	ြ္ည်	ယာယာ၊	ဒိ်န်
	bi.ru.bi.gaŋ	gɛ	ŋom	kʰɤj	graˑj	ja.jaɤ	din
	villager	PL	believe	as, like	tell	brave woman	that
	NP		vt	n-ref	vi	n	dem
					PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
					EmCl		
				Head	Modifier		Modifier
				RNP			

SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

The villagers believed just as what Brave Woman said.

WSR2-4.1	နာင်	ရဆို့ဝ်၊	ဒို်ရ်	အီတ်	ဒေ
	naŋ	raˑsɤh	dor	ʔit	de
	queen	be awake, alert	origin (from)	sleep	SELF
	n	vi	n-ref	vi	prn-refl
				PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT
				EmCl	
			Head	Modifier	
			RNP		

SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER

The queen woke from her sleep

Here are a few more examples of referential noun phrase.[105]

WSR 19.9	ခ္ုန်	အ္ုယေန်	ဒိ်န်	အို်န်	လာ်၊	ယ္ို်ဝ်	ဝါင်အို်မ်	ဝါင်င်ရ်	ဝါင်ခ္ုရ်	ဂဲ
	kʰu.nʌ	ʔu.jen	din	ʔʌn	lʌh	jɤ	vaŋ.ʔom	vaŋ.ŋər	vaŋ.kʰur	gɛ
	within the span of (inside)	garden	that	3S	go to	find	water court	fire court	wind court	PL
	n-ref	n	dem	prn-per	VP		NP			
	Head	Modifier	Modifier							
	RNP									

CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT

In the garden, he went and saw water court, fire court, and wind court. [spatial location]

---

[105] For more examples, see section 5.7. CLAUSE MODIFIER.

WS10.10

အော	ဒီ	လေး;	ဇောမ်	အှိုန်
?ɔ	di	leh	ɟɔm	?ʌn
1S	WILL	move down	along with	3S
	aux-asp		n-ref	prn-per
prn-per		VP	Head	Modifier

RNP (over ɟɔm / ?ʌn)

SUBJECT PREDICATE | CLAUSE MODIFIER

I will go down with it. [accompany]

WS53.4

အှိုန်	ယှိုဝ်	ဒေ	ဘြိုင်လဲ	ဘွံမ်	ဒိုရ်	ဘီ
?ʌn	jɤ	de	brəŋ.lɛ	bləm	dor	bi
3S	possess	SELF	horse cart	many	...than	people
prn-per	vt	prn-refl	NP		n-ref	n
					Head	Modifier

RNP (over dor / bi)

SUBJECT PREDICATE C. POST-C. MODIFIER COMPLEMENT | CLAUSE MODIFIER

He had more horse cart than other people did. [evaluation]

WSR2-2.5

အာည်	ဆော့တဲ	မိင်	ပုရ်	ဆငီ
?aj	sɔ?.tɛ	məŋ	pur	sa·ŋi
1D (inclusive)	observe religious precepts	till about	seven	UNIT(time,day)
prn-per	vi	n-ref	QP	

RNP (over məŋ)

We will observe religious precepts for seven days.

အှိုန်	လဲပ်	တ	ဲ
?ʌn	lɛp	ta·	ŋɛ
3S	skillful	DIR	speech
prn-per	adj	n-ref	n
		Head	Modifier

RNP (over ta· / ŋɛ)

SUBJECT PREDICATE C. | CLAUSE MODIFIER

He is skillful to speak. [domain]

It is noteworthy that when a referential noun phrase taking embedded structure fills the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER before clause central, demonstrative ဒိန် /din/ at the end of the referential noun phrase becomes necessary. Compare these two examples.

WSR2-33.5

တ	ကိုရ်လှိုင်	ဂဲ	ဒိန်	စမ်	မှိုဝ်;ပဲတ်	ဟောည်ဘွော,	ဘဲ	ဂဲ	အှိုန်
ta·	kʌr.lɛŋ	gɛ	din	cəm	mɤh.pɛt	hɔj.blɔɤ	bɛ	gɛ	?ʌn
TIME	play together	3P	that	GEN	YES-emp	white water-snail	overcome	3P	3S
n-ref	EmCl		dem	conn-cl	prt-v	n		vt	NP
RNP									
CLAUSE MODIFIER				\<link\> cs-emp		SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	COMPLE.

When they played together, White Water-snail still won theirs (their beans).

*WSR2-4.1

နှာင်	ရဆှိုဝ်;	ဒိုရ်	အီတ်	ဒေ	(ဒိန်)
naŋ	ra·sɤh	dor	?it	de	(din)
queen	be awake, alert	situation origin (from)	sleep	SELF	(that)
n	vi	n-ref	EmCl		(dem)
		RNP			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER			

The queen woke from her sleep

The first example has its CLAUSE MODIFIER before clause central; the second one has its CLAUSE MODIFIER after clause central. The CLAUSE MODIFIERs of both examples contain embedded clause. Demonstrative ဒိန်ႆ /din/is obligatorily in the first example but is optionally in the second one.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building referential noun phrase.

Table 27: Structure of GP (SL) Referential Noun Phrase

Referential Noun Phrase		
Head	Modifier	
n-ref	n, prn-per, prn-refl, NP, VP, QP, EmCl	dem

10.1.3. Apposition (APP)

GP (SL) occasionally puts two nominal forms that have the same reference side by side without connective. This apposition structure may be adopted from foreign languages. Here are two examples.

WSR11.1

မာ	အိုန်ႆ	ယာဖည်	လာ်꞉	ပဲ꞉	ဂါရ်	ဟောမ်	ပွေ
ma	ʔʌn	ja.pʰaj	lʌh	pɛh	gar	hɔm	ple
mother	3S	ogress	move to (go)	pick up	3D	eat	fruit (tree)
NP		n	VP				n
APP							
SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.				COMPLEMENT

His mother, the ogress, went to pick fruits for them to eat.

WSR2-26.1

ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	ဒိန်ႆ	ဇု꞉ငဲ	မာ	ဒေ	ယာဖည်
hɔj.blɔʏ	din	ɟu.ŋɛ	ma	de	ja.pʰaj
white water-snail	that	obey	mother	SELF	ogress
NP		vt	NP		n
			APP		
SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		

He obeyed his mother, the ogress.

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building apposition.

Table 28: Sturcture of GP (SL) Apposition

APP	
n, NP	n, NP

10.1.4. Quantifier Phrase (QP)

A qunatifier phrase functions in two ways in GP (SL). It can fill the position of ATTRIBUTIVE in a noun phrase or CLAUSE MODIFIER in a clause. In the latter case, it serves like a temporal nominal structure. Basically, it is composed of a quantifier, either a cardinal or an indefinite quantifier, and a measure. Here are some examples.

2M13.1

ဂါရ်	ယ္ဒိဝ်	တိုင်ပွေ	အ္꞉	တိုင်
gar	jʏ	tɯŋ.ple	ʔu	tɯŋ
3D	find	fruit tree	one	UNIT(plant)
prn-per	vt	n	card-coeff	meas-ind
			QP	
		CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
		NP		

They saw a fruit tree.

WS3.3

အော	ကာတိုၵ်ႈမ်	ၡန်ႈပဳ	လှၞ်	အၠ	လှိုၵ်ႈ
ʔɔ	ka.tɤm	rʌn.po	la·j	ʔu	lɤh
1S	NEVER	dream	EMP-(not)even	one	UNIT(freq.)
prn-per	aux-asp	vi	prt-mood	num.card	meas
				QP	

SUBJECT   PRE-C. MODIFIER   PREDICATE C.   cs-mood   CLAUSE MODIFIER

I never have such a dream, not even once.

WS25.1

တၢ်ႈန်	ဆင်	မာ	အုၞ်ႈန်	တံမ်	အုၞ်ႈန်
twən	sa·ŋi	ma	ʔʌn	təm	ʔʌn
every, each	UNIT(time,day)	mother	3S	instruct, order	3S
quan-indef	meas	NP		vt	prn-per
QP					

CLAUSE MODIFIER   SUBJECT   PREDICATE C.   COMPLEMENT

Everyday his mother instructed him.

WSR2-47.5

မှိုၵ်ႈ	ဒှိၞ်ႈ	ဆဲၚ်	မှိုၵ်ႈ	ဒှိၞ်ႈ	ၡီၞ်ရ	ပၞ်	ရလော့
mɤh	dojɤ	sɛŋ	mɤh	dojɤ	kʰrir	pa·j	ra·lɔɤ
be	all	gem	be	all	gold	all	valley
VP						quan-indef	n
						QP	

PREDICATE   CLAUSE MODIFIER

All the valley was gem and gold.

WSR2-4.4

① ② ③ ④ ⑤

အာည်	လၢ်ႈ	ဆော့တဲ	ၡုၞ်န်	အၠယေန်	အုိၚ်
ʔaj	lʌh	sɔʔ.tɛ	kʰu.nʌ	ʔu.jen	ʔɯ
1D (incl.)	move to	observe religious precepts	with the span of (inside)	garden	this
prn-per	VP		RNP		

SUBJECT   PREDICATE C.   CLAUSE MODIFIER

We have come and observed religious precepts in this garden

မှိုၵ်ႈ	ဟၢ့ည်	နၢ်	ၡုရ	ဆင်	လလ	ယၢ်
mɤh	hwa·jɤ	nʌʔ	pur	sa·ŋi	la·.la·	jʌʔ
YES-emp	FINISH	be full	seven	UNIT(time,day)	exactly	TRUE
prt-v	VP		num.card	meas	adv-cl	prt-mood
			QP			

①
②
③ cs-emp   PREDICATE   CLAUSE MODIFIER   CL.MODIFIER
④ EmCl-temp
⑤ CLAUSE MODIFIER   cs-mood

for seven good days already.

Sometimes, GP (SL) quantifier phrase with cardinal အၠ /ʔu/ 'one' is followed by a demonstrative and becomes a demonstrative quantifier phrase. It usually fills the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER in a clause to give information of temporal location. Here is an example.

Couple 10.1	အၖ	လှိုၖ်ၖ	အိုၐ်	တာယော	ယွိုၖ်,		ဒ္ဒ်ရ	ရအီၐ်	ဒေ
	ʔu	lɤh	ʔɯ	ta.jɔ	jɤˀ		dor	ra·ʔit	de
	one	UNIT(freq.)	this	timid man	get up		from	sleeping area	SELF
	num.card	meas-act	dem	n	vi		RNP		
	QP								
	CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

This time, Timid Man got up from his bed…

In this case, the cardinal အၖ /ʔu/ 'one' in the quantifier phrase can be omitted, for example,

Couple 15.3	လှိုၖ်ၖ	အိုၐ်	ဘီရ္	ဂဲ	စံၐ်	ထာၖ်	ထဲၖ်	တာယော	မှိုၖ်ၖ	ဘီဝါၐ်
	lɤh	ʔɯ	bi.ru	gɛ	cəm	tʰaŋ	tʰɛŋ	ta.jɔ	mɤh	bi.vaw
	UNIT(freq.)	this	villager	PL	GEN	think	again	timid man	be	brave man
	meas-act	dem	NP		conn-cl	VP		Cl		
	QP									
	CLAUSE MODIFIER		SUBJECT		<link>	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

This time, the villagers thought again that Timid Man was a brave man

Repeated quantifier phrase structure brings the idea of frequency. Usually, temporal measure is used in the first occurance of the repeated quantifier phrase and action measure of frequency, လှိုၖ်ၖ /lɤh/, is involved in the second occurance. Here is an example.

2M9.6	ခုန်ဟောခံၐ်	ဖီလ္	လိုၖ်	ပူရ်	ဆၖီ	အၖ	လှိုၖ်ၖ
	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	pʰi.lu	loj	pur	sa·ŋi	ʔu	lɤh
	king	ogre	EMP-even	seven	UNIT(time,day)	one	UNIT(freq.)
	n	n	prt-mood	card-coeff	meas-temp	card-coeff	meas-act
				QP-n			

Even the ogre king, each week,

လၖ်ၖ	ၖ်ပ	ဂါရ်	တ	အၖယေန်	ဒေ
lʌh	ŋɤp	gar	ta·	ʔu.jen	de
move to (go)	look at	3D	DIR	garden	SELF
VP		prn-per	RNP		

went to see them in his garden.

Sometimes, the two quantifier phrases in the repeated structure do not stay side by side. The first phrase remains in the position of PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER for temporal range, while the second phrase shifts to CLAUSE MODIFIER at the end of the clause for frequency within that temporal range. Here is an example.

GF13.2	အၖ	ဆၖီ	လၖ်ၖ	ဟော	အ္ည	လှိုၖ်ၖ
	ʔu	sa·ŋi	lʌh	he	ʔwa·j	lɤh
	one	UNIT(time,day)	move to (go)	firewood	three	UNIT(freq.)
	QP		vdir	n	QP	
	PRE-C. MODIFIER		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

I go to sell firewood three times per day.

Repeated quantifier phrase structure with consecutive cardinals can be used to show approximity. Here is an example.

Pock39.5

ဇိၣ့်ဝ့်	ဂ့ၤဝ့်	အ့ၣ်	ဆၢ့ဇီ		ဖံၣ်	ဆၢ့ဇီ	ဂ့ၤဝ့်
ɟɯ?	gɤ	ʔwaˑj	saˑŋi		pʰon	saˑŋi	gɤ
take time	only	three	UNIT(time,day)		four	UNIT(time,day)	only
vi	adv-scope	QP-n					adj
		QP					

It only takes three or four days.

Besides structure repeating, quantifier phrase is also widely used with reduplication. Very often, reduplication gives emphasis. In some occasions, reduplication changes or extends the meaning. Consider this example.

GF7.3

	ကၠ့ၣ်	ဒီ	လၢ့ဲ့	ဟၣ	အ့	ဆၢ့ဇီ		အ့	ဆၢ့ဇီ
	kʌn	di	lʌh	he	ʔu	saˑŋi		ʔu	saˑŋi
	at the time of	WILL	move to	firewood	one	UNIT(time,day)		one	UNIT(time,day)
①	n-ref	VP		n	QP-n				
②		PREDICATE C.		COMPLE.	CLAUSE MODIFIER				
③		EmCl							
④	NP								
⑤	CLAUSE MODIFIER								

When he went to sell firewood each day,

	မေန်	ကာခြိၵ်	ဒေ	ဒီၣ်	အ့ၣ်	လိ့ဝ့ဲ့		အ့ၣ်	လိ့ဝ့ဲ့
	men	ka.kʰrir	de	din	ʔwaˑj	lɤh		ʔwaˑj	lɤh
	look	gold fish	SELF	that	three	UNIT(freq.)		three	UNIT(freq.)
①	vt	NP			QP-n				
②									
③									
④									
⑤	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT			CLAUSE MODIFIER				

he looked his goldfish 'three times'

	တ့ၣ်န်	ဆၢ့ဇီ	ယၢ့ဲ့
	twən	saˑŋi	jʌ?
	every	UNIT(time,day)	SURE
①	QP-n (cont')		prt-mood
②			
③			
④			
⑤	CLAUSE MODIFIER		cs-mood

a day.

In this example, there are two sets of reduplicated quantifier phrases. One is အ့ဆၢ့ဇီအ့ဆၢ့ဇီ /ʔu saˑŋi ʔu saˑŋi/ acts as CLAUSE MODIFIER in the embedded clause. Another one is အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့ /ʔwaˑj lɤh ʔwaˑj lɤh/ becoming a building part of a larger quantifier phrase, which acts as CLAUSE MODIFIER in the clause. အ့ဆၢ့ဇီအ့ဆၢ့ဇီ /ʔu saˑŋi ʔu saˑŋi/ comes from repeating အ့ဆၢ့ဇီ /ʔu saˑŋi/, which means 'one day.' The repetition turns the meaning to 'each day,' or literally may read 'one day at a time.' In the same way, အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့ /ʔwaˑj lɤh ʔwaˑj lɤh/ comes from repeating အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့ /ʔwaˑj lɤh/, which means 'three times,' and may literally read 'three times at a time' or 'every three times.' However, as there is another quantifier phrase, တ့ၣ်န်ဆၢ့ဇီ /twən saˑŋi/, following it and supplying the meaning of 'each day' to determine its meaning, the repetition in အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့ /ʔwaˑj lɤh ʔwaˑj lɤh/ is more for emphasis. The emphatic effect by reduplication in this case is more obvious in comparing to another reading of no reduplication, that is အ့ၣ်လိ့ဝ့ဲ့တ့ၣ်န်ဆၢ့ဇီ /ʔwaˑj lɤh twən saˑŋi/, with meaning unchanged. Here is a set of examples for comparison. The first one is a general description; the second one is with emphasis by reduplication.

GF13.2

အ္	ဆင်ီ	လꩪ်ꩩ	ဟေ	အꩩ္ည	လိꩩ်ꩩ
ʔu	saˑŋi	lʌh	he	ʔwaˑj	lɤh
one	UNIT(time,day)	move to (go)	firewood	three	UNIT(freq.)
QP		vdir	n	QP	
CLAUSE MODIFIER		PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

I go to sell firewood three times per day.

GF 4.3

အ္	ဆင်ီ	အ္	ဆင်ီ	အော	ယင်ꩤ	ဟေ	အꩩ္ည	လိꩩ်ꩩ	အꩩ္ည	လိꩩ်ꩩ	အေ့
ʔu	saˑŋi	ʔu	saˑŋi	ʔɔ	jən	he	ʔwaˑj	lɤh	ʔwaˑj	lɤh	ʔeʔ
one	UNIT(day)	one	UNIT(day)	1S	sell	firewood	three	UNIT(freq.)	three	UNIT(freq.)	TRUE
QP-n				prn-per	vt	n	QP-n				prt-mood
CLAUSE MODIFIER				SUBJ.	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER				cs-mood

I sell firewood three times per day.

Here is another example of a simple clause having reduplicated quantifier phrase with meaning extended.

WSR2-26.7

အော	ရꩦ့	ဘိုꩤ်	အ္	ဆင်ီ	အ္	ဆင်ီ
ʔɔ	rɛʔ	bɤ	ʔu	saˑŋi	ʔu	saˑŋi
1S	wait	REQ (still)	one	day	one	day
prn-per	VP		QP-n			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		CLAUSE MODIFIER			

Let me wait (for the opportunity) everyday.

There is another special usage of quantifier phrase in formation of temporal embedded clause, which merely functions as CLAUSE MODIFIER to show temporal information. See section 9.1.1.2 Temporal Embedded Clause (EmCl-temp) for a detailed discussion. Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building quantifier phrase.

Table 29: Structure of GP (SL) Quantifier Phrase

QP		
QP-n		dem
quan-indef, num.card	meas, n	

10.2. Verbal Phrase

Verbal phrases include phrases having similar grammatical functions as verbs and adjectives do that can fill the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL. Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building a simple verbal phrase.[106]

Table 30: Basic Structure of GP (SL) Verbal Phrase

VP/AP		
aux, QP-n, neg	vi, vt, vdir, vlink, adj, AP	vdir, adv, VP(SP), prn-refl

A verbal phrase is composed of more than one verbal form but of the same kind, either a kind of verb or adjective. If a verbal phrase is composed of verbs, it is ***verb phrase (VP)***; if it is composed of adjective, it is ***adjective phrase (AP)***.

In view of structural relationship between parts of a verbal phrase, there are six types of verbal phrases in GP (SL), including subject-predicate (SP), verb-object (VO), head-modifier (HM), supplement-main (SM), coordination (COOR), and verb chain (VV). These types of structural

---

[106] For a detailed discussion on the order of different grammatical forms in a verbal phrase, see sections 5.2. PREDICATE, 5.5. PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER, and 5.6. POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER.

relationship occur in compound formation as well.[107] One way to distinguish between a verbal compound and a verbal phrase is whether or not the meaning of parts is fully kept in the resultant form. If it is, it is a phrase; if it is not, it is a compound.[108]

10.2.1. Subject-Predicate (SP) Verbal Phrase

Subject-predicate (SP) verbal phrases are phrases whose parts are in subject-predicate relationship. The first part is subject, which is the target of the second part, predicate. GP (SL) SP verbal phrase can have noun, personal pronoun, or reflexive personal pronoun[109] as its first part, and a verbal form as its second part. It is not an independent structure but fills the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER, showing the purpose of an action. Here are two examples.

2M11.2	ဖိလ္လူ	ဂဲ	ကာ	ပေါ	ဒေ	၃ိပ်	ဂါရ်
	pʰi.lu	gɛ	ka	pɔ	de	ŋɤp	gar
	ogre	PL	NEG (IND)	arrive	SELF	look at	3D
	n		neg	vi	prn-refl	vt	prn-per
					Subject	Predicate	
					VP(SP)		
	SUBJECT	PRE-C. MODIFIER		PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER		COMPLEMENT

The ogres did not come to see them.

Est19.3	အိန်	တိုန်	ဒဲး	မောဒခါည်	ဒါ	ဂြူ
	ʔʌn	ton	dɛh	mɔ.da·kʰaj	da	gru
	3S	send	give	Mordecai	dress	clothes
	n	VP		n-prop	prn-refl	n
				Subject	Predicate	
				VP(SP)		
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		POST-C. MODIFIER		COMPLEMENT

She sent clothes for Mordecai to dress.

10.2.2. Verb-Object (VO) Verbal Phrase

Verb-object (VO) verbal phrases are phrases whose parts are in verb-object relationship. The first part is a transitive verb and the second is its object in a nominal form of noun or noun phrase. The Verb part fill the position of PREDICATE CENTRAL in a clause and the Object part the COMPLEMENT, that the whole verbal phrase fills PREDICATE in the clause. See this example.

WS55.3	ဂဲ	တိုဝ်း	ြိ ရ်
	gɛ	tɤh	kʰrir
	3P	take	gold
	prn-per	vt	n
	SUBJECT	Verb	Object
		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
		VP(VO)	
		PREDICATE	

They took gold.

This verbal phrase structure is often reduplicated to form a coordinative verbal phrase. Here is an example.

---

[107] See section 8.3. Compound.
[108] See also section 10.3. Contrast between Word and Phrase.
[109] See the paragraph concerning reflexive personal pronoun in section 9.1.10.1. Personal Pronoun (prn-per).

WS29.12

အော	ဒီ	လာꩻ	လွ္ဝင်	ကုင်	လွ္ဝင်	ရှ
ʔɔ	di	lʌh	lwəŋ	ku·ŋ	lwəŋ	ru
1S	WILL	move to (go)	visit, wander	country	visit, wander	village
prn-per	aux-asp	vdir	vt	n	vt	n
			Verb	Object	Verb	Object
			VP(VO)		VP(VO)	
			VP(COOR)			

VP(VV)

VP(SM)

SUBJECT   PREDICATE

I will go to visit countries and villages

10.2.3. Head-Modifier (HM) Verbal Phrase

Head-modifier (HM) verbal phrases are phrases whose parts are in head-modifier relationship. The first part is head which is modified or determined by the second part, modifier. Usually, the type of HM verbal phrase follows the word class of the head. The choice of modifiers is limited to directive verbs and certain verbs, like ပွ္တ် /pwət/ 'throw away,' အ္နန် /ʔun/ 'fix,' ပဲတ် /pɛt/ 'throw,' ရောတ် /rɔt/ 'reach,' ပေါ /pɔ/ 'arrive,' ဗိရ် /vir/ 'return,' ကွ္ငင် /klǝŋ/ 'support,' etc., adverbs, and reflexive SP verbal phrases. The Modifier part acts like typical adverb, filling the position of POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER in a clause, while the Head part fills the PREDICATE CENTRAL. The entire HM verbal phrase may fill the PREDICATE. Here is an example of HM verbal phrase used in a clause, followed by a list of phrase examples.

2M12.10

ဂါရ်	လာꩻ	ပွ္တ်	တ	ဘို္င်လိင်အို္မ်	ကု္ရနံ္မ်
gar	lʌh	pwət	ta·	buŋ.li·ŋ.ʔom	kʌr.nəm
3D	move to (go)	DONE AWAY WELL	DIR	pool, lake, pond, tank	spirit
prn-per	vdir	adv-mann	RNP		
	Head	Modifier			
	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER			
	VP(HM)				
SUBJECT	PREDICATE			CLAUSE MODIFIER	

They went to the spirit lake.

HM Verbal Phrases							
Verbal Phrase			Head			Modifier(s)	
ပို္ရ်လာꩻ /pʌr lʌh/	vi	'fly to go'	ပို္ရ် /pʌr/	vi	'fly'	လာꩻ /lʌh/	vdir.	'go to'
လောင်လေꩻ /lɔŋ leh/	vt	'float down'	လောင် /lɔŋ/	vt	'float'	လေꩻ /leh/	vdir	'move down'
ပွ္တ်ဝေင် /pwət veŋ/	vi	'leave to return'	ပွ္တ် /pwət/	vi	'leave'	ဝေင် /veŋ/	vdir.	'back'
လာꩻပွ္တ် /lʌh pwət/	vdir.	'go away'	လာꩻ /lʌh/	vdir.	'go to'	ပွ္တ် /pwət/	vi	DONE AWAY
တံ္မ်အ္နန် /təm ʔun/	vt	'instruct'	တံ္မ် /təm/	vt	'instruct'	အ္နန် /ʔun/	vt	FIX
တို္ꩻဒေပို္ꩻဒေမေန် /tɤh de pɤh de men/	vt	'take to unwrap and look'	တို္ꩻ /tɤh/	vt	'take'	ဒေ ပို္ꩻ /de pɤh/	VP	'unwrap'
						ဒေ မေန် /de men/	VP	'look'
ဒါꩻဒေတံ္မ် /dah de təm/	vt	'say to instruct'	ဒါꩻ /dah/	vt	'say'	ဒေ တံ္မ် /de təm/	VP	'instruct'

ယွို်ဒေ /jɤ de/	vt	'have for oneself'	ယွို် /jɤ/	vt	'possess'	ဒေ /de/	prn-refl	SELF
ပွိင်လာင်လဲင် /plaŋ laŋ.lɛŋ/	adj	'very bright'	ပွိင် /plaŋ/	adj	'bright'	လာင်လဲင် /laŋ.lɛŋ/	adv	'all'
ကျညှိးညှိး /kjaˑ ɲoh.ɲoh/	adj	'excellent'	ကျ /kjaˑ/	adj	'excellent'	ညှိးညှိး /ɲoh.ɲoh/	adv	'very'
မည်လှုတ်လာည် /maˑj lut.laj/	adj	'overly hot'	မည် /maˑj/	adj	'hot'	လှုတ်လာည် /lut.laj/	adv	'exceedingly'

As shown in these examples, the main meaning of HM verbal phrase follows the Head part with modification from the Modifier part. However, when reflexive SP verbal phrase acts as the Modifier part, it influences or gives nuances to particular verbs which act as the Head part.[110] Consider this example.

Verbal Phrase			Head			Modifier		
ယွို်ဒေဆတိုင် /jɤ.de.saˑtuuŋ/	vt	' hear'	ယွို် /jɤ/	vi	HAPPENED	ဒေဆတိုင် /de.saˑtuuŋ/	VP(SP)	'hear'

Morphologically, ယွို် /jɤ/ is the Head part. Semantically, it seems ဒေဆတိုင် /de.saˑduuŋ/, the Modifier part, that gives the central meaning of the resultant verbal phrase, yet the phrase literally may mean 'possess the hearing of.'

HM verbal phrases may look similar to HM verb compounds. However, semantically, a HM verbal phrase consists of more than one action but with different weight; a HM verb compound consists of only one action. Consider this HM verbal phrase ပို်ရ်လာ်း /pʌr.lʌh/ 'fly to go to,' which is both 'fly' and 'go to,' and this HM verb compound မ့်ပို်ရ်ဒဲပ် /mʌʔ.pʌr.dʌp/ 'kneelingly sit,' which is not both 'kneel' and 'sit' but to sit in a way like kneeling.[111]

10.2.4. Supplement-Main (SM) Verbal Phrase

Supplement-main (SM) verbal phrases are phrases whose parts are in supplement-main relationship. The first part supplies information, like aspect, intension, capability, negation, etc. to explain the second part and fills the position of PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER in a clause. The choice of supplement is limited to auxiliary verbs, negator, passive verb, and certain verbs, like ဘို်န် /bɤn/ 'be allowed', ဘဲ /bɛ/ 'be able', etc. The second part gives the main meaning of the phrase and fills the PREDICATE CENTRAL. Here is an example of SM verbal phrase used in a clause, followed by a list of phrase examples.

GF5.2	အော	ဒိ	ဒဲး	ကာခြိရ်	အိုင်	တ	မိ
	ʔɔ	di	dɛh	ka.kʰrir	ʔɯ	taˑ	mi
	1S	WILL	give	goldfish	this	DIR	2S
	prn-per	aux-asp	vt	NP		RNP	
		Supplement	Main				
		PRE-C. MODIFIER	PREDICATE C.				
		VP(SM)					
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

I will give this goldfish to you.

---

[110] For a discussion of how reflexive personal pronoun and reflexive SP phrase influence the verb ယွို် /jɤ/'possess,' passive verb like ဘို်ပ် /bʌp/'be forced to,' and verbs relating to capability, permission, or process, such as နို်ပ် /nəp/'be able to,' ဘို်န် /bɤn/'be allowed,' ပဲန် /pɛn/'become,' etc., see section 9.1.10.2. Reflexive Personal Pronoun (prn-ref).
[111] See also section 10.3. Contrast between Word and Phrase.

SM Verbal Phrase

Verbal Phrase			Supplement			Main		
ဆိုပ်ငဲ့ဂြည် /sɯp ŋɛ.graˑj/	vt	'continue to speak'	ဆိုပ် /sɯp/		aux-asp CONTINUE	ငဲ့ဂြည် /ŋɛ.graˑj/	vt	'speak'
ဟွည်းကိုတ် /hwaˑj kɤt/	vt	'finished giving birth'	ဟွည်း /hwaˑj/		aux-asp FINISH	ကိုတ် /kɤt/	vt	'give birth'
ဒါ်နွ်ရ်းဟ /dʌʔ nwəɹ.haˑ/	adj	'remain worrying'	ဒါ် /dʌʔ/		aux-asp REMAIN	နွ်ရ်းဟ /nwəɹ.haˑ/	adj	'worry'
လိုဟ်ာ့ /lo lɔt/	vdir	'wish to go up'	လို /lo/		aux-int WISH	ဟ်ာ့ /lɔt/	vdir	'move up'
ကာယာ၊ဟ်ာ့ /ka.jaˀ hʌʔ/	vi	'not dare to move up'	ကာယာ၊ /ka.jaˀ/		aux-cap 'not dare'	ဟ်ာ့ /hʌʔ/	vi	'move up'
ဒီကာလေး /di ka leh/	vi	'will not move down'	ဒီ /di/		aux-asp WILL	လေး /leh/	vi	'move down'
			ကာ /ka/		neg NEG			
ဘ်ုန်ကဗဲ့ /bɤn kaˑvɛʔ/	vt	'allow to play'	ဘ်ုန် /bɤn/		vi 'be allowed'	ကဗဲ့ /kaˑvɛʔ/	vt	'play'
ဘ်ုပ်လောင် /bʌp lɔŋ/	vt	'must float'	ဘ်ုပ် /bʌp/		vi-pass INVOLUNTARY- 'be forced to'	လောင် /lɔŋ/	vt	'float'

10.2.5. Coordination (COOR) Verbal Phrase

GP (SL) has two kinds of coordination (COOR) verbal phrases. The first kind is **connective COOR verbal phrase**. Their main parts are related to each other and put side by side on an equal ranking with connectives. This is how a COOR verbal phrase is distinct with a verb chain,[112] which has more than one verb stand side by side without any connective. Main parts must be verbal forms and of the same kind. There is no interruption between parts of COOR verbal phrase by other constituents.[113] Usually, there are two main parts and they are usually related but neither synonymic or antonymic. For example,

COOR Verbal Phrases

Verbal Phrase			Link		Verbal Part 1			Link		Verbal Part 2		
ပည်ဒါးပည်ယာမ် /paˑj.dah.paˑj.jam/	v	'speak and cry'	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	ဒါး /dah/		vt 'speak'	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	ယာမ် /jam/		vi 'cry'
ပည်ဟောမ်ပည်ဟာပ် /paˑj.hɔm.paˑj.hap/	v	'eat rice and 'curry''	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	ဟောမ် /hɔm/		vt 'eat rice'	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	ဟာပ် /hap/		vt 'eat 'curry''
ပည်ရ်ျန်ပည်အာမ် /paˑj.rjən.paˑj.ʔam/	adj	'happy and surprised'	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	ရ်ျန် /rjən/		adj 'happy'	ပည် /paˑj/	conn	အာမ် /ʔam/		adj 'surprised'

The second kind of coordination (COOR) verbal phrase in GP (SL) is **reduplicative COOR verbal phrase**. It is formed by reduplication rather than using connective to link the parts together, especially when the verbal phrase is in a certain structure. Consider these two examples. The first one is a reduplication of auxiliary verb in PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER and the second one is a rewrite of the first one.

---

[112] See section 10.2.6. Verb Chain (VV).

[113] If, for example, there is auxiliary verb, adverb, and/or object between its main parts, it is not a COOR verbal phrase but a coordinative sentence. However, by reduplicating those 'interrupting' constituent(s) to have a parallel pattern, a reduplicative COOR verbal phrase can be formed.

WS11.3

ခို့ည်မော	မိ	ဒ္ဒိ	ညာ	ဒ္ဒိ	လေ့	ဇောမ်	ဟောည်
kʰɤj.mɔ	mi	di	ɲa	di	leh	ɟɔm	hɔj
how?	2S	WILL	do	WILL	move down	along with	water snail
interrog	prn-per	aux-asp	vt	aux-asp	vdir	perp	n
		VP(SM)		VP(SM)			
		VP(COOR)					
CL. MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL				CLAUSE MODIFIER	

LT: How will you do to go down with a snail?

FT: You can't do (in no way can do) anything to go down with a snail.

WSR2-12.2

ခို့ည်မော	မိ	ဒ္ဒိ	ညာ	ဒေ	လေ့	ဇောမ်	ဟောည်	အို့ဝ်
kʰɤj.mɔ	mi	di	ɲa	de	leh	ɟɔm	hɔj	ʔɯ
how?	2S	WILL	do	SELF	move down	along with	water snail	this
interrog	prn-per	aux-asp	vt	prn-refl	vdir	perp	n	dem
				VP(SP)			NP	
			VP(HM)					
						RNP		
		VP(SM)						
CL.MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL				CLAUSE MODIFIER		

LT: How will you do to go down with a snail?

FT: You can't do (in no way can do) anything to go down with a snail.

Here are two more examples of building coordination phrase by reduplication. One shows coordination by reduplication of clause connectives when the coordination verbal phrases are in a sentence structure. Another one shows coordination by reduplication of part of each phrase structure in a complex phrase.

M27-3.2

အယ်	စံမ်	လာ့း	စံမ်	ဟာ့်
ʔɛ	cəm	lʌh	cəm	hʌʔ
1P (incl.)	GEN	move to (go)	GEN	move up
prn-per	conn-cl	vdir	conn-cl	vdir
SUBJECT	<link>	PRED. C.	<link>	PRED. C.

'fact' part

However, we will go up

မော	အယ်	ပေါ	မော	အယ်	ရောတ်
mɔ	ʔɛ	pɔ	mɔ	ʔɛ	rɔt
GEN-until	1P (incl.)	arrive	GEN-until	1P (inclusive)	reach
conn-cl	prn-per	vi	conn-cl	prn-per	vi
<link>	SUBJECT	PRED. C.	<link>	SUBJECT	PRED. C.

'negative generalized situation' part

until we arrive there.

WS29.12

လွဲ့င်	ကု့င်	လွဲ့င်	ရ့
lwəŋ	ku·ŋ	lwəŋ	ru
visit, wander	country	visit, wander	village
vt	n	vt	n
VP(VO)		VP(VO)	
VP(COOR)			

visit countries and villages

Sometimes, a reduplication structure may turn a verbal phrase to a nominal phrase. Consider this example,

M44-16.3	ပ်ုန်	အှင်	ပ်ုန်	လှို	မီ
	pʌn	ʔuˑŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
	Emb-OBJ	like, love	Emb-OBJ	wish	2S
	prn-emb	vt	prn-emb	vt	prn-per
	NP				

what you like and wish

The two parts of the verbal phrase အှင် /ʔuŋ/ 'like' and လှို /lo/ 'wish' may be linked by connective ပည် /paˑj/ and read ပည်အှင်ပည်လှို /paˑj ʔuŋ paˑj lo/ 'like and wish.' However, as the phrase is used in an embedded clause with the embedded pronoun ပ်ုန် /pʌn/, the connective can be omitted by reduplicating the embedded pronoun to show the coordination.[114] This usage may make the writing more poetic by giving a rhythm from reduplication.

There is a special reduplicative COOR verbal phrase, which is composed of two synonymic or antonymic compounds which has the same structure. What is reduplicated is not the structure outside the phrase but is that of its building parts. For example, ဖှိမ်ပေျာနှ်ရ်ှ;ရ်ုှန် /pʰɤm.pjɔ nwəɹ̥.rjən/ 'happy (literally, heart-happy-heart-happy' is composed by two compounds which are synonyms, ဖှိမ်ပေျာ /pʰɤm.pjɔ/ 'happy' and နှ်ရ်ှ;ရ်ုှန် /nwəɹ̥.rjən/ 'happy.' Both of them have the same SP structure. Also, the Subject part and the Predicate part of both compounds are synonyms respectively. These two compound join together and form a phrase having a reduplication pattern of ABA'B'. It is noteworthy that these two parts can switch their order and that it is a phrase. This is how it is distinct from a compound that the order of parts is fixed.[115]

10.2.6. Verb Chain (VV)
Verb chain (VV) is a special type of verbal phrase that more than one verb are put together without any linker. These verbs do not have grammatical relationship such as subject-predicate, verb-object, head-modifier, supplement-main, or coordination, but show a sequence of actions, that the latter one is the result, or purpose, etc. of the former one. Here are some examples.

VV Verbal phrases							
Verbal Phrase		Verb 1			Verb 2		
အှိဖှ်; /ʔi.ɟʌh/	'push to fall'	အှိ /ʔi/	vt	'push'	ဖှ်; /ɟʌh/	vi	'fall'
လှ်;ဆှ်တဲ /lʌh.sʌʔ.tɛ/	'go to fast'	လှ်; /lʌh/	vdir.	'go to'	ဆှ်တဲ /sʌʔ.tɛ/	vi	'fast'
ဝ၂ွ /vaˑɟu/	'pass to meet'	ဝ /viˑ/	vt	'pass'	၂ွ /ɟu/	vt	'meet'
မှ်၁ကြ္ုပ် /mʌʔ.grup/	'sit to do obeisance'	မှ်၁ /mʌʔ/	vi	'sit'	ကြ္ုပ် /grup/	vt	'do obeisance'

10.2.7. Complex Verbal Phrase
GP (SL) makes use of all these kinds of verbal phrases to build complex verbal phrase in order to pack several ideas together. Here are some examples.

---

[114] This example can be analyzed in another way and it becomes a complex COOR noun phrase rather than a COOR verbal phrase.

ပ်ုန်	အှင်	မီ	ဂါရ်	ပ်ုန်	လှို	မီ
pʌn	ʔuŋ	mi	gar	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb-what	like, love	2S	conn-ph	Emb-what	wish	2S
NP.1				NP.2		
Main 1			<Link>	Main 2		
NP						

what you love and what you wish

[115] See also section 10.3. Contrast between Word and Phrase.

WS47.5

ပါရ်	ယို့ဝ်	ဒေ	ဖိၢရ်ႏ	ဒေ	ဟောမ်	ဒေ	ဒါ
par	jɤ	de	ɹɤɹ̥	de	hɔm	de	da
2D	possess	SELF	buy	SELF	eat	SELF	dress
prn-per	vi	prn-refl	vt	SP		SP	
				COOR			

HM (under buy–SELF)
SP (under possess–SELF)
HM (under possess)

SUBJECT | PREDICATE

You have (the rings) to buy your daily use.
LT: You have (the rings) for buying (things) for your eating and dressing.

WS53.6

ဖိၢရ်ႏ	မီ	ဒိုႏည်	အာည်	တာင်	မိုဝ့်	တ	တာဆထေ
ɹɤɹ̥	mi	dɤj	ʔaj	taŋ	muɯʔ	ta·	ta · sa·tʰe
buy	2S	bring, take	1D (inclusive)	put, place	ox	DIR	rich man
vt	prn-per	vt	prn-per	vt	n	RNP	
	SP		SP				

HM
HM
VO

PREDICATE | CLAUSE MODIFIER

Buy and bring ox for us to put (things) at the rich man.

WS52.4

နာင်	ဇောမ်	လေး	ဒေ	မေန်	တ	လော,
naŋ	ɹɔm	leh	de	men	ta·	lɔɤ
princess	follow	move down	SELF	look	DIR	valley
n	vi	vdir	prn-refl	vt	RNP	
	HM		SP			
	HM					

SUBJECT | PREDICATE | | | | CLAUSE MODIFIER

The princess followed down to look in the valley.

WS2.2

ခုန်ဖိ	လေး	ဒဲး	အုံန်	ဟောမ်	ပ္လေဘြိ	ဆိန်
kʰun.pʰi	leh	dɛh	ʔʌn	hɔm	ple.bri·	sin
spirit	move down	give	3S	eat	mango(round)	ripe, cooked
n	vdir	vt	prn-per	vt	NP	
	VV		SP			
	HM					
	VO					

SUBJECT | PREDICATE

The spirit came down to gave ripe mangos for her to eat.

Here are some more examples which worth discussion or attention.

WS22.1

ယာဖဆည်	တိုဝ်း	ဒေ	ဒှိုည်	ဗေင်	အှ်န်	တ	ဂါင်	ဒေ
ja.pʰaj	tɤh	de	dɤj	veŋ	ʔʌn	ta·	gaŋ	de
ogress	take	SELF	bring, take	move back (go/come)	3S	DIR	house	SELF
n	vt	prn-refl	vt	vdir	prn-per	RNP		
		SP						
	HM							
	HM							
	VO							
SUBJECT	PREDICATE						CLAUSE MODIFIER	

The ogress took and brought him back to her house.

This example has two transitive verbs တိုဝ်း /tɤh/ 'take' and ဒှိုည် /dɤj/ 'bring' that have the same object အှ်န် /ʔʌn/ 'it' and a directive verb ဗေင် /veŋ/ 'move back (go/come)' that shows the spatial direction of the actions towards the ogress' house. It is reasonable to put the directive verb ဗေင် /veŋ/ close to the referential noun phrase which shows the spatial direction. However, this example is considered 'not-good' GP (SL) and should be rewritten in this way that, obviously, it becomes a less complex three-layer clause, instead of a four-layer one.

*WS22.1

ယာဖဆည်	တိုဝ်း	ဗေင်	ဒေ	ဒှိုည်	အှ်န်	တ	ဂါင်	ဒေ
ja.pʰaj	tɤh	veŋ	de	dɤj	ʔʌn	ta·	gaŋ	de
ogress	take	move back (go/come)	SELF	bring, take	3S	DIR	house	SELF
n	vt	vdir	prn-refl	vt	prn-per	RNP		
	HM		SP					
	HM							
	VO							
SUBJECT	PREDICATE						CLAUSE MODIFIER	

The ogress took and brought him back to her house.

Here is another example. There are two transitive verbs တိုဝ်း /tɤh/ 'take' and လှ်ုပ် /l̥ʌp/ 'put.' တိုဝ်း /tɤh/ 'take' is repeated to bring different objects. The object of လှ်ုပ် /l̥ʌp/ 'put' should be all of what the subject takes that it is understood and omitted. These three parallel VO phrases form a VV structure.[116]

WS55.3

ဂဲ	တိုဝ်း	ဗှီရ်	တိုဝ်း	ဆဲင်	လှ်ုပ်	(ဗှီရ်ဆဲင်)	တ	လှဲ
gɛ	tɤh	kʰrir	tɤh	sɛŋ	l̥ʌp	(kʰrir.sɛŋ)	ta·	l̥ɛ
3P	take	gold	take	gem	put (into)	(gold and gem)	DIR	cart
prn-per	vt	n	vt	n	vt	(n)	RNP	
	VO		VO		(VO)			
	VV							
SUBJECT	PREDICATE						CLAUSE MODIFIER	

They took the gold and gem and put (them) to the cart.

This complex predicate can be written in another way without changing meaning. This way makes the clause shorter but more layers. Also, it breaks the reduplication pattern that brings rhythm. These changes make it sound more flat and straightforward, and less poetic.

---

[116] The first two VO phrases can be considered in COOR and form VV with လှ်ုပ် /l̥ʌp/ 'put.'

*WS55.3

ဂဲ	တိူ်း	ဒေ	လ့ူပ်	ခြီရ်	ဆဲင်	တ	လ့ဲ
gɛ	tɤh	de	l̥ʌp	kʰrir	sɛŋ	ta·	l̥ɛ
3P	take	SELF	put (into)	gold	gem	DIR	cart
prn-per	vt	SP		NP		RNP	
	VV						
	VO						
SUBJECT	PREDICATE					CLAUSE MODIFIER	

They took the gold and gem and put (them) to the cart.

One more example here seems to have two VO phrases with reduplication of the same verb,[117] similar to the last one.

WS29.12

အော	ဒီ	လာ်း	လ့ုင်	ကုင်	လ့ုင်	ရှူ
ʔɔ	di	lʌh	lwəŋ	ku·ŋ	lwəŋ	ru
1S	WILL	move to (go)	visit, wander	country	visit, wander	village
prn-per	aux-asp	vdir	vt	n	vt	n
			VO		VO	
		VV				
	SM					
SUBJECT	PREDICATE					

I'll go visit around countries and villages

However, these two VO constructions should be considered a word, not a phrase because they together bring a single comprehensive idea, which is 'visiting around,' and not literally 'visiting countries and villages.' Hence, this clause is better to analyze in this way.

WS29.12

အော	ဒီ	လာ်း	လ့ုင်ကုင်လ့ုင်ရှူ
ʔɔ	di	lʌh	lwəŋ.ku·ŋ.lwəŋ.ru
1S	WILL	move to (go)	visit around countries and villages
prn-per	aux-asp	vdir	vi
		VV	
	SM		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		

I'll go visit around countries and villages

Here is an illustration of grammatical forms building SP verbal phrase, VO verbal phrase, HM verbal phrase, SM verbal phrase, COOR verbal phrase, and Verb chain.

Table 31: Structure of GP (SL) SP Verbal Phrase

SP Verbal Phrase	
Subject	Predicate
n, prn-refl	vi,vt, vdir, adj

Table 32: Structure of GP (SL) VO Verbal Phrase

VO Verbal Phrase	
Verb	Object
vt	n, NP

---

[117] These two VO phrases can be considered in COOR and form VV with လာ်း/lʌh/'move to (go).'

Table 33: Structure of GP (SL) HM Verbal Phrase

HM Verbal Phrase	
Head	Modifier-n
vi, vt, vdir, adj	vdir, VP(SP), prn-refl, adv, ပွံတ် /pwət/, အှုန် /ʔun/, ပဲတ် /pɛt/, ရောတ် /rɔt/, ပေါ /pɔ/, ဗီရ် /vir/, ကွံင် /kləŋ/

Table 34: Structure of GP (SL) SM Verbal Phrase

SM Verbal Phrase	
Supplement-n	Main
aux, QP-n, neg, vi-pass, ဘှုံန် /bɤn/, ဘဲ /bɛ/	vi, vt, vdir, adj

Table 35: Sturcture of GP (SL) COOR Verbal Phrase

COOR Verbal Phrase			
(Link)	Main	(Link)	Main
conn-ph	vi, vt, adj	conn-ph	vi, vt, adj

Table 36: Sturcture of GP (SL) Verb Chain

Verb Chain (VV)	
Verb	Verb
vi, vt, vdir	vi, vt

10.3. Contrast between Word and Phrase

Words, especially compounds, and phrases shares certain structures, like COOR, HM, SM, VO, and SP. Even though it may be difficult to draw a fine line between these two grammatical structures, here is a list of contrastive features of words and phrases in GP (SL).

a. Parts in words may be skewed, altered, extended, or even lose their own meanings in the resultant form, but parts in phrases always keep their own meanings in the resultant form. That is, if there is any meaning change or lost of parts in the resultant form, it must be a word.

b. Words may be made up of bounded morphemes that are not able to stand alone but phrases may never do. That is, if there is any bounded morhpeme found in a form, it must be a word.

c. Words may be formed by fix combinations of certain morphemes. Phrases have comparatively more flexibility in collocation of words. That is, if there is any unique combination that either part cannot be found in other forms, it must be a word.

d. Words may have a fix order of the parts. Phrases can allow the parts switching order without changing the meaning. That is, if there is order switching of parts in a form and its meaning retains, it must be a phrase.

e. Words may never have any connective to link parts together, but phrases often do. That is, if there is a connective involved in a form, it must be a phrase.

f. Both words and phrases can have certain reduplication structures.[118] But AA, AABB, and (der-A)(der-B)[119] may never occur in phrase and ABA'B' and A-A-neg-A may never occur in word.

---

[118] See also chapter 14. Reduplication.
[119] The symbol '(der-A)' means a derivative made from A.

11 *Embedding*

GP (SL) is accustomed to putting a higher level grammatical structure in a lower or the same level grammatical structure.[120] This is called embedding. This phenomenon occurs from phrase to sentence with four varieties, including clause-in-phrase, phrase-in-phrase, clause-in-clause, and sentence-in-sentence.

11.1. Clause-in-Phrase Embedding

SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause structure embedded in ATTRIBUTIVE of a noun phrase leads a 'clause-in-phrase' phenomenon and creates a grammatical structure called embedded clause.

11.1.1. Embedded Clause (EmCl)

Embedded clause, in fact, is not a clause per se but a variant of SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause structure. Even though it consists of both parts of SUBJECT and PREDICATE, they are in inverted order, that is PREDICATE-SUBJECT.[121] This inverted order is its distinctive feature. Here is an example.

ဪ	က	နံပ်	ဟာ	အုန်	ဪ	တ	အုန်
?ɔ	ka	nəp	ha	?un	?ɔ	ta·	?ʌn
1S	NEG	know	Emb-where	keep	1S	DIR	3S
prn-per	VP		prn-emb	vt	prn-per	n-ref	prn-per
			/CLAUSE MODIFIER/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	
				EmCl			
			CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE			
			NP				
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		COMPLEMENT				

I can't remember where I keep it.

In this example, in the embedded clause, its SUBJECT follows its PREDICATE CENTRAL. Its supposed COMPLEMENT အုန် /?ʌn/ 'it' is remoted to the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER by having a referential noun တ /ta·/ preceeding it. This kind of re-ordering of a clause may be seen as a result of fronting of clause constituent, in this example, which is the CLAUSE MODIFIER realizing spatial location.[122]

---

[120] Simply put, the hierarchy of grammatical units, from top to bottom, is sentence, clause, phrase, word, morpheme. The higher the unit sits in the hierarchy, the 'larger' its structure size is. Theoretically, higher units are built up by lower units. Embedding, that a higher unit takes part in building a lower unit (or of the same rank), is untypical.

[121] It is considered a special grammatical structure rather than a fronting information structure for topicalization in this analysis for the time being. The reasons are that the order of PREDICATE-SUBJECT consistently occurs in clause-in-phrase embedding structure without exception, but fronting information structure can compare with its counter structure in normal word order. The embedded clause construction normally needs to follow an embedded pronoun or a nominal form, but fronting information structure does not need an additional indicator or marker. Cf. chapter 13. Fronting Clause Constituent.

[122] For more discussion on how fronting of constituent affects clause structure, see chapter 13. Fronting Clause Constituent.

Embedded clause functions like an adjective in a noun phrase, filling clause constituent of ATTRIBUTIVE and modifying the noun phrase central which is an embedded pronoun[123] or a referential noun. This noun phrase and referential noun phrase can fill clause constituent directly. Here are two examples.

WSR10.3

(ယာနာင်ခွန်ဟောခမ်)	ရဲ့	ဒေ	ငိုပ်	ကိုဝ်	ပုံန်	ညာ	ခွန်ဟောခမ်
(ja.naŋ.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm)	rɛʔ	de	ŋɤp	gɤ	pʌn	ɲa	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm
(queen)	watch	SELF	look	only	EmCl -OBJ	do	king
(n)	VP				prn-emb	vt	n
					/COMPLEMENT/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT
						EmCl	
					CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
					NP		
(SUBJECT)	PREDICATE				COMPLEMENT		

The queen only watched what the king did.

WSR2-4.1

နာင်	ရဆိုဝ်း	ဒိရ်	အီတ်	ဒေ
naŋ	ra·sɤh	dor	ʔit	de
queen	be awake, alert	origin (from)	sleep	SELF
n	vi	n-ref	vi	prn-refl
			PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT
			EmCl	
		CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
		RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

The queen woke from her sleep

The host noun phrase of an embedded clause often is used to modifiy another noun or pronoun, serving as ATTRIBUTIVE. However, the host referential noun phrase of an embedded clause never does that but serves as CLAUSE MODIFIER directly. Here are some examples.

M0-4.3-4

ဂဲ	အုန်	ဂွည်	မန္တလေး	ကုရ်ဇောည်	ဒေ	တိုဝ်း	အရေ
gɛ	ʔʌn	gwa·j	mən.ta·.le	kʌɹɟɔj	de	tɤh	ʔa·re
3P	Emb-SUBJ	dwell, stay	Mandalay	assist, help	SELF	take	business
prn-per	prn-emb	vi	n-prop	VP			n
	/SUBJECT/	PREDICATE	CL. MODIFIER				
		EmCl					
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE					
	NP						
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE						
NP							
SUBJECT				PREDICATE			

Those who lived in Mandalay helped to take the business.

---

[123] The embedded pronoun functions like the relative pronoun in English.

Ab4.2

ယံင်	ပဲတ်		ဒ္ဘည်,	ပြုပြြုမ်	ပုၣ်	လေည်	တာ	ပီ
jəŋ	pɛt		dojʏ	gru.grʏm	pʌn	lej	ta	pi
sell	DONE AWAY/OFF	all	thing	Emb-OBJ	trade	old man	that
VP				n	prn-emb	vt	n	dem
					/COMPLETMENT/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
						EmCl		
					CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE		

NP
CENTRAL ATTRIBUTIVE
NP

(He) sold away all the things which that old man traded

WSR2-34.1

ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	ကုၣ်	ဟာ	ရေၥတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော,	တ	ဒေ	ဂွၣ်ဲ
kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	ku·ŋ	ha	rɔt	hɔj.blɔʏ	ta·	de	gwa·j
king	country	Emb-where	reach	white water-snail	DIR	SELF	dwell
n	n	prn-emb	vi	n	RNP		
		/CL. MODIFIER/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	CL. MODIFIER		
			EmCl				
		CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE				

NP
CENTRAL ATTRIBUTIVE
NP
CENTRAL ATTRIBUTIVE
NP

The king of the country where White Water-snail arrived and lived….

In the first example, the subject of the embedded clause is the same as what the embedded clause modifies. In this case, SUBJECT in the embedded clause is omitted.[124] Occasionally, demonstrative is needed to put at the end of the phrase.[125] For example,

WSR2-33.5

တ	ကုၣ်ရ်လုၣ်င်	ဂဲ	ဒိန်	စံမ်	မိၣ်;ပဲတ်	ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော,	ဘဲ	ဂဲ	အုၣ်ၣ်
ta·	kʌr.ḷeŋ	gɛ	din	cəm	mʏh.pɛt	hɔj.blɔʏ	bɛ	gɛ	ʔʌn
DIR	play together	3P	that	GEN	YES-emp	white water-snail	overcome	3P	3S
n-ref	vt	prn-per	dem	conn-cl	prt-v	n		vt	NP
	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT							
	EmCl								
C.	ATTRIBUTIVE		ATTRIBUTIVE						

RNP
CLAUSE MODIFIER
<link> cs-emp   SUBJECT   PRED. C.   COMPLE.

When they played together, White Water-snail still won theirs (their beans).

Very often, the embedded pronoun is omitted when there is an explicit noun being modify by the host noun phrase of an embedded clause. Then, it looks like that the embedded clause modifies that explicit noun directly. In fact, it is hidden by omission only. Here are some examples.

---

[124] Up till the point of writing, the embedded clauses found either have both PREDICATE and SUBJECT or just have PREDICATE. None of them has COMPLEMENT.

[125] See section 10.1.2. Referential Noun Phrase (RNP).

Dict71

မွၣ်ႏ	ဒါ	အ္ိႏန	ဂိ္ည်ဂိ္ည်
m̥ʌʔ	da	ʔʌn	goj.goj
hat	wear	3S	not fit
n.	vt	prn-per	adj
/COMPLETMENT/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
	EmCl		
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE		
NP			
SUBJECT			PREDICATE

The hat he wore wasn't fit

WS46.6

အော	ကု္ရ်ဇေ	မီ	ကွံန်	ရိ္က်	အော	အ္ိဝ်း
ʔɔ	kʌr.ve	mi	kwən	rək	ʔɔ	ʔɤ˞
1S	pity	2S	son, daughter	love	1S	Oh!
prn-per	vt	prn-per	n	vt	prn-per	interj
			/COMPLEMENT/	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	
				EmCl		
			CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE		
			NP			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE		ADDRESS			INTERJECTION

Oh, the child whom I love. I pity you.

WSR2-26.9

အော	ဒီ	ရာတ်	ဘိ္ဝ်	အော	လၣ်း	လွိ္င်	တ	အ္ုယေန်	ဒါ္း	မာ	အော	ပီ
ʔɔ	di	rat	bɤ	ʔɔ	lʌh	lwəŋ	ta˙	ʔu.jen	dah	ma	ʔɔ	pi
1S	WILL	steal	only	1S	go to	wander	DIR	garden	say	mother	1S	that
prn-per	aux-asp	vt	adv-mood	prn-per	vdir	vt	n-ref	n	vt	n	prn-per	dem
	VP							/COMPLE./	PRED. C.	SUBJECT		
									EmCl			
								CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE			ATTR.
								NP				
								C.	ATTRIBUTIVE			
								RNP				
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.							CLAUSE MODIFIER				

I'll secretly wander at the garden which my mother mentioned.

However, in some cases, especially when the explicit noun can refer to a general concept, the usage of embedded pronoun to have an embedded clause in a noun phrase implies generalization. Consider this example.

M67-12.2

ဘီ	အ္ိႏန	ဟွ္ည်း	ယံမ်	ကာ	ယိ္ဝ်	စိ	လောင်	ကာ	ကို္တ်
bi	ʔʌn	hwa˙jɤ	jəm	ka	jɤ	ci˙	lɔŋ	ka	kɤt
person	Emb-SUBJ	FINISH	die	NEG (IND)	find	POLITE	affair of	NEG (IND)	give birth
n	prn-emb	aux-asp	vi	VP					
	/SUBJECT/	EmCl							
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE							
	NP								
NP									
SUBJECT			PREDICATE						
Cl									

Men who already died will be borned again.

If it is written without embedded pronoun, the noun phrase becomes a clause.

*M67-12.2	ဘီ	ဟွည်,	ယဲမ်	ကာ	ယို့ဝ်	စိ	လောင်	ကာ	ကို့တ်
	bi	hwa·jˀ	jəm	ka	jɤ	ci·	lɔŋ	ka	kɤt
	person	FINISH	die	NEG (IND)	find	POLITE	affair of	NEG (IND)	give birth
	n	aux-asp	vi	VP			NP		
		VP							
	SUBJECT	PREDICATE		PREDICATE					
	Cl.1			Cl.2					

Someone who died will be borned again.

The meaning is changed. In the first example, ဘီအုံန်ဟွည်,ယဲမ် /bi ʔʌn hwa·j jəm/ means '*all those* who died;' in the second example, ဘီဟွည်,ယဲမ် /bi hwa·j jəm/ means '*someone* died.'

Occasionally, it is found that embedded pronoun is omitted without an explicit nominal form preceding an embedded clause to show what it is to modify, but demonstrative ဒိန် /din/ is added at the end of the embedded clause. This makes it seem a kind of nominal phrase. However, in fact, this seeming nominal phrase is reduced from a clause of a sentence. Besides fronting of PREDICATE,[126] this may be another kind of writing style to put emphasis on a certain situation that brings further development. Compare these two examples of progress clauses. The first one contains a reduced clause in its first part; the second one is a normal sentence.

WSR2-56.7	ညောညော	အုံန်	ဒိန်	ဘီ	ဂို့ဝ်	ညဝ်	လို့ည်
	ɲɔ.ɲɔ	ʔʌn	din	bi	gɤp	ɲa·w	loj
	very ugly	3S	that	people	PROG-even	tease, ignite	EMP-even
	adj	prn-per	dem	n	conn-cl	vt	adv-mood
	EmCl						
	part 1			part 2			

He was so ugly that people even teased

	ခုန်ဟောခဲမ်	ဘုံ့ပ်	ဒေ	အျုတ်	အုံန်
	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	bʌp	de	ʔjət	ʔʌn
	king	happen (illness)	SELF	son-in-law	3S
	Cl				

part 2 (cont')
the king having such a son-in-law.

WSR2-39.4	ခုန်ဟောခဲမ်	ကဆေ	ဘီ	ငါ့ည်	ဂို့ဝ်	ခိရို့ရို့;	ပည်	ပိင်
	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	ka·se	bi	ŋaj	gɤp	kʰo.roh.roh	pa·j	pəŋ
	king	be ashamed	people	face	PROG-even	very red	EMP-all	UNIT(round thing)
	n	vi-pass	n	n	conn-cl	adj	QP	
	part 1			part 2				

The king was so ashamed that his face even all turned red.

11.1.2. Temporal Embedded Clause (EmCl-temp)

GP (SL) has a special kind of embedded clause that exclusively functions in CLAUSE MODIFIER to show temporal information. It is called temporal embedded clause. It is formed by a temporal noun or a quantifier phrase, which contains a time measure, following a verb, the choice of which is limited to နှံ် /nʌʔ/ 'be full,' ဟွည်, /hwa·j/ 'finish,' ယို့ဝ် /jɤ/ 'find,' ဘုံန် /bɤn/ 'get,' ပေါ /pɔ/ 'arrive,' ရောတ် /rɔt/ 'reach,' etc. This verb can be modified by PRE-CENTRAL MODIFIER and POST-CENTRAL MODIFIER to give

---

[126] This writing style is different from fronting of verb, in the case of which demonstrative does not insert at the end of the structure. See chapter 13. Fronting Clause Constituent.

nuances to the time referred, and even by verbal particle. Temporal embedded clause, then, follows referential noun and form referential noun phrase in order to fill the CLAUSE MODIFIER of a clause. Here are some examples.

Couple 13.1

ဘုန်	ရောတ်	ဆိုမ်လာ	ရစၟဉ်	ဒါင်	ဒီန်	ပေါ	ဒေ	လီပ်	တ	ရှ
bən	rɔt	sɤm.la	ra·vaj	diŋ	din	pɔ	de	lip	ta·	ru
time after	reach	late night	tiger	big	that	arrive	SELF	move in	DIR	village
n-ref	vi	n-temp	NP			VP			RNP	
		EmCl-temp								
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE									
RNP										
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.			CL.MODIFIER	

After late night, that big tiger came to the village.

WSR2-15.1

ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊	လောင်	လေး	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
hɔj.blɔɤ	lɔŋ	leh	ɟɔm	ʔom
white water-snail	float	move down	along with	water
n	VP		RNP	

① ② ③ ④ ⑤

⑥ SUBJECT   PREDICATE C.   CLAUSE MODIFIER

White Water-snail floated down the river

ဘုန်	ဟ္ဥ်ည်၊	ဘိုန်	ပွိုတ်	ပုရ်	ဆိုမ်	ပုရ်	ဆင်
bən	hwa·jɤ	bɤn	pwət	pur	sɤm	pur	sa·ŋi
time after	FINISH	get	DONE AWAY WELL	seven	UNIT(night)	seven	UNIT(day)
n-ref	aux-asp	vt	adv-mann	QP-n			
	PRE-C. MOD.	PRED. C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER			
	EmCl-temp						
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE						
RNP							
CLAUSE MODIFIER							

① ② ③ ④ ⑤ ⑥

for seven days and nights already.

ကုိန်	ပေါ	ရမ္ၟဝ်	ခုန်ရ်	ပါင်	ဒါင်	ရဟ္ျိင်	ဂဲ	ဒီန်
kʌn	pɔ	ra·ɱɤ	kʰu.nʌr	paŋ	daŋ	ra·hjəŋ	gɛ	din
at the time of	arrive	night	inside	big field		place to herd	PL	that
n-ref	vi	n-temp	n-ref	NP				dem
	EmCl-temp		RNP					
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE							
RNP								
CLAUSE MODIFIER			CLAUSE MODIFIER					

(they all were) in the big herding field at night

    Instead of forming referential noun phrase, temporal embedded clause more often functions on its own to fill the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER in a clause. Here are some examples.

WS5.1

နာ်	ပူရ်	ဆင်ီ	ဂါရ်	ဇေင်	တ	ဟော
nʌʔ	pur	sa·ŋi	gar	veŋ	ta·	hɔ
be full	seven	UNIT(time,day)	3D	move back (go/come)	DIR	palace
vi	QP		prn-per	vdir		RNP
PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER					
EmCl-temp						
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER

After seven days, they went back to the palace.

WSR2-20.1

ဇေင်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော	လောင်	လေ့	ဇောမ်	အိုမ်
pɔŋ	hɔj.blɔɤ	lɔŋ	leh	ɟɔm	ʔom
raft	white water-snail	float	move down	along	water
NP		VP		RNP	
①					
②					
③					
④ SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER	

White Water-snail's raft floated down the water

ဘ္ုန်	ထဲင်	ပ္ွတ်	ပူရ်	ဆိုမ်	ပူရ်	ဆင်ီ
bɤn	tʰɛŋ	pwət	pur	sɤm	pur	sa·ŋi
get	again	DONE AWAY WELL	seven	UNIT(night)	seven	UNIT(day)
vt	adv-mann	adv-mann	QP-n			
① PRED. C.	POST-C. MOD.	POST-C. MODIFIER	CLAUSE MODIFIER			
②						
③ EmCl-temp						
④ CLAUSE MODIFIER						

for seven days and seven nights.

WSR2-4.4

အာည်	လာ်း	ဆော့တဲ	ခုန်	အ္ုယေန်	အိုဝ်
ʔaj	lʌh	sɔʔ.tɛ	kʰu.nʌ	ʔu.jen	ʔɯ
1D (incl.)	move to	observe religious precepts	with the span of (inside)	garden	this
① prn-per	VP		RNP		
②					
③					
④ SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		

We have come and observed religious precepts in this garden

မ္ုဝ်း	ဟ္ွည်း	နာ်	ပူရ်	ဆင်ီ	လလ	ယာ့်
mɤh	hwa·jɤ	nʌʔ	pur	sa·ŋi	la·la·	jʌʔ
YES-emp	FINISH	be full	seven	UNIT(day)	exactly	TRUE
① prt-v	aux-asp	vi	QP		adv-cl	prt-mood
② cs-emphasis	PRE-C. MOD.	PRED. C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		CL. MODIFIER	
③ EmCl-temp						
④ CLAUSE MODIFIER						cs-mood

for seven good days already.

Apparently, temporal embedded clause seems never having its SUBJECT shown when it functions in CLAUSE MODIFIER of a clause, no matter by itself or by forming referential noun phrase. Its subject is understood as the general time concept. However, when there is a specific time concept referred to, GP (SL) will make it explicit. A nominal form will precede and be modified by a temporal embedded clause with the demonstrative ဒိန် /din/ 'that' at the end of the noun phrase, but without any embedded pronoun. Here are two examples.

WSR2-22.2	ဆင်ၚ	နာ်ၚ	ပူရ	ကျိုရ	လလ	ဒိန်	ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊
	saˑŋi	nʌʔ	pur	kjər	laˑ.laˑ	din	hɔj.blɔɤ
	day(s)	be full	seven	UNIT(month)	exactly	that	white water-snail
①	n	vi	QP		adv-cl	dem	n
②		PRED. C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		CL. MOD.		
③		EmCl-temp					
④	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE				ATTRIBUTIVE	
⑤	NP						
⑥	CLAUSE MODIFIER						SUBJECT

On the very day when it completed seven months, White Water-snail

	စီ	လောတ်ခြါပ် ဒေ	ပဲန်	ဘီ	ကုန်ယံရ်းကုန်ရဒိၚ	အူ	ကူ
	ci	lɔt.kʰrap	de	pɛn	bi	kur.jər.kur.dəŋ	ʔu	ku
	COHE-temporal	transform	SELF	become	people	beautiful	one	UNIT(person)
①		VP			NP			
②								
③								
④								
⑤								
⑥								

<link>	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT

transformed and became a beautiful person.

WSR5.1-2	ဆင်ၚ	ဆာ့တဲ	ဂါရ	နာ်ၚ	လ	ပူရ	ဆင်ၚ	ဒိန်
	saˑŋi	sʌʔ.tɛ	gar	nʌʔ	laˑ	pur	saˑŋi	din
	day(s)	fast	3D	be full	well	seven	UNIT(time,day)	that
①	NP			vi	adv-mann	QP		
②				PRED. C.	POST-C. MOD.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		dem
③				EmCl-temp				
④	CENTRAL			ATTRIBUTIVE				ATTR.
⑤	NP							
⑥	CLAUSE MODIFIER							

On the very day when the days which they fasted completed seven days,

	ဂါရ	စီ	ဗိရ	ဗေင်	တ	ဟော	ဒေ
	gar	ci	vir	veŋ	taˑ	hɔ	de
	3D	COHE-temporal	return (from)	move back	DIR	palace	SELF
①	prn-per	VP			RNP		
②							
③							
④							
⑤							
⑥	SUBJECT	PREDICATE CENTRAL			CLAUSE MODIFIER		

they went back to their palace.

However, when there is a clause connective preceding the structure, grammatically, it becomes a clause structure; semantically, it does not point out a particular temporal location but states a situation that the clause connective refers to. Compare the last example with this example.

WSR5.1-2

ခိုꩠည်	ဆင်	ဆၢ်တဲ	ဂၢရ်	နၢ်ꩠ	လ	ပူꩡရ်	ဆင်	ဒိꩠန်
kʰɤj	sa·ŋi	sʌʔ.tɛ	gar	nʌʔ	la·	pur	sa·ŋi	din
CAUSE.as	day	fast	3D	be full	exactly	seven	UNIT(day)	that
conn-cl	NP			VP		QP		
\<link\>	SUBJECT			PREDICATE C.		CLAUSE MODIFIER		
explanatory causative sentence-part.1								

As (what they planned) the day they fasted completed seven good days,

ဂၢရ်	စိ	ဗိꩡရ်	ဖေင်		တ	ဟၢꩠ	ဒေ
gar	ci	vir	veŋ		ta·	hɔ	de
3D	COHE	return (from)	move back (go/come)		DIR	palace	SELF
prn-per	conn-cl	VP			RNP		
SUBJECT	\<link\>	PREDICATE C.			CLAUSE MODIFIER		
explanatory causative sentence-part.2							
they went back to their palace.							

Here is a summary of the possible embedded clause structures.

Table 37: GP (SL) Clause-in-Phrase Structure

		NP			
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE			
n, prn, NP	prn-emb	EmCl			dem
		PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

		NP		
		EmCl-temp		
n, prn, NP	Ø	V	QP	dem
		PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

		RNP		
	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE		
Ø	n-ref	EmCl		dem
		PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	

		RNP		
		EmCl-temp		
Ø	n-ref	V	QP	dem
		PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

11.2. Phrase-in-Phrase Embedding

When a phrase structure is embedded in another phrase, a 'phrase-in-phrase' phenomenon occurs. Usually, it is noun phrase which is the host phrase with various phrase types, such as noun phrase, adjective phrase, quantifier phrase, referential noun phrase, etc., embedded. Occasionally, a noun phrase or quantifier phrase is embedded in, for example, a referential noun phrase. Here are some examples.

WS28.3

အော	လၢ်ꩡ	မေန်	အုꩠယေꩠန်	မၢ	အော
ʔɔ	lʌh	men	ʔu.jen	ma	ʔɔ
1S	move to (go)	look	garden	mother	1S
prn-per	VP		n	NP	
			NP		

my mother's garden

MG197

ဂါရ်	အာရ်	ကူ		အၟန်	ခြၟမ်
gar	ʔar	ku		ʔʌn	kʰrʌm
3D	two	UNIT(person)		3S	rich
prn-per	QP			prn-per	vi
NP					
NP					

Out of two of them, he is rich.

WS3.7

အော	ဟောမ်	မမောန်ခြိရ်	ငါမ်	ညိုးညိုး
ʔɔ	hɔm	mai·mɔn.kʰrir	ŋam	ɲoh.ɲoh
1S	eat(rice)	mango (long)	sweet	exceedingly
prn-per	vt	n	AP	
		NP		

I ate very sweet mangos.

M44-1.1

ဖျိုရ်	အၟူ	တို		တိုဝ်း	ငါမ်ပိုး
pʰjə̆r	ʔu	to		tɤh	ŋam.poh
bee	one	UNIT(animal,insect)		take	nectar
n	QP			vt	n
NP					

There was a bee taking nectar.

အၟိမ်	တ	လော,
ʔom	ta·	lɔɤ
water	DIR	valley
n	RNP	
NP		
spring		

WSR19.9

ခုၟန်	အၟူယေန်	ဒိန်	အၟန်	လၟႏ်း	ယိုဝ်	ဝါင်အၟိမ်	ဝါင်ငၟရ်	ဝါင်ခုရ်	ဂဲ
kʰu.nʌ	ʔu.jen	din	ʔʌn	lʌh	jɤ	vaŋ.ʔom	vaŋ.ŋər	vaŋ.kʰur	gɛ
inside	garden	that	3S	go to	find	water court	fire court	wind court	PL
n-ref	NP		prn-per	VP		NP			
RNP									

In the garden, he went and saw water court, fire court, and wind court.

WSR2-2.5

အၟည်	ဆော့တဲ		မ်ိင်	ပုၟရ်	ဆင်ဂီ
ʔaj	sɔʔ.tɛ		məŋ	pur	sa·ŋi
1D (inclusive)	observe religious precepts		till about	seven	UNIT(time,day)
prn-per	vi		n-ref	QP	
			RNP		

We will observe religious precepts for seven days.

Est 26.9-10

ဆေ	အော	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	လို	ညာ	ဒဲ်း	တ	ဘီ	ကူ	ပိုၟန်	ဆီန်	လိုၟပ်	အော	ဒိန်
se	ʔɔ	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm	lo	ɲa	dɛh	ta·	bi	ku	pʌn	sin	l̥op	ʔɔ	din
what?	1S	king	need	do	give	DIR	person	UNIT(person)	Emb-OBJ	wish	reward	1S	that
interrog	APP			VP		n-ref	n	meas	EmCl				
							NP						
							NP						
							RNP						

What do I, the King, need to do to the one whom I wish to reward?

Here is a summary of the possible phrase-in-phrase structures.

Table 38: GP (SL) Phrase-in-Phrase Structure

NP			
ATTRIBUTIVE	CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
NP	n, prn	NP, RNP, QP, AP	dem

RNP		
CENTRAL	ATTRIBUTIVE	
n-ref	NP, QP	dem

11.3. Clause-in-Clause Embedding

SUBJECT-PREDICATE clause structure embedded in COMPLEMENT and CLAUSE MODIFIER of a clause results in a 'clause-in-clause' phenomenon. It is noteworthy that regular SP clause fills the position of COMPLEMENT or PARENTHESIS, and temporal embedded clause with inverted SP structure fills the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER. The former embedding structure is usually used to express cognition, reaction, expression (both restatement and quotation in direct speech or indirect speech), etc. or to give further information, and the latter one is generally used to provide temporal information. Here are some examples.

WSR19.5

အ့ုန်	နံပ်	ပွဲတ်	မာ	ဒေ	မ္ိုဝ်း	ယာဖၥည်
ʔʌn	nəp	pwət	ma	de	mɤh	ja.pʰaj
3S	know	MMNT	mother	SELF	be	ogress
prn-per	vt	adv	NP		vlink	n
			SUBJECT		PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT
			Cl			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	POST-C. MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT			
Cl						

He knew right away that his mother was an ogress.

M0-4.8

ဂ်	ယော	ဘော့,	တအၥင်း	ဟၥမ်
gɛ	jɔ	bɛ̄ɛ̄ɣ	ta·ʔaŋ	ham
3P	worry	literature	Ta'ang	become blank
prn-per	vt	NP		vi
		SUBJECT		PREDICATE
		Cl		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		

They worry that Ta'ang literature may disappear.

WSR2-29.2

တီပ်	ကွ်န်	ဒေ	ဟောည်ဘ္ဘော,	ဟ္ဝည်,	ကာ	ယ္ုိဝ်
tip	kwən	de	hɔj.blɔɣ	hwa·jɣ	ka	jɤ
seek	son	SELF	white water-snail	FINISH,ALREADY	NEG (IND)	find
vt	APP			VP		
	SUBJECT			PREDICATE		
	Cl					
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT					

(She) found that her son, White Water-snail, had already gone.

M44-16.3

မီ	ကုၣ်	နံပ်	ဒါႋ	အော	အုၣ်	ညိုႋ	မီ	ဒိၣ်[127]
mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔuˑŋ	ŋoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	VP		Cl				dem
SUBJECT	<link>	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT				

If only you can say 'I really love you,' ...

WS42.1

ဘီ	ြပည်	နာၣ်	ဒီ	ဘေည်	ဆပြွတ်	ဒေ
bi	graˑj	naŋ	di	bej	saˑprwət	de
people	tell	princess	WILL	throw	turban	SELF
n	vt	n	VP		NP	
		Cl				
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT				

people said that the princess would threw her turban

Est8.3

အုၣ်	တိုၣ်ႋ	ဒေ	ကုၣ်ဒေါမ်	ကွ်ၣ်	ကူၣ်ချုတ်	ဒေ	၊	မ္ိုၣ်ႋ	ကွ်ၣ်အီပုၣ်	�züü	အဲဆထံရ်
ʔʌn	tɤh	de	kʌn.dɔm	kwən	kun.djət	de		mɤh	kwən.ʔi.pʌn	ɟɯ	ʔɛ.saˑtʰər
3S	take	SELF	adopt	child	uncle	SELF		be	daughter	call	Esther
prn-per	VP			NP				Cl			
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.			COMPLEMENT				PARENTHESIS			

He adopted his uncles's child, that is a girl called Esther

WS5.1

နႋ	ပူရ်	ဆင်ၢ	ဂါရ်	ဗေင်	တႋ	ဟော
nʌʔ	pur	saˑŋi	gar	veŋ	taˑ	hɔ
be full	seven	UNIT(time,day)	3D	move back (go/come)	DIR	palace
vi	QP		prn-per	vdir	RNP	
EmCl-temp						
CLAUSE MODIFIER			SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

After seven days, they went back to the palace.

WSR2-3.1

ဂါရ်	ဆော့တဲ	ဘ္ုၣ်	တောရ်	ဆင်ၢ
gar	sɔʔ.tɛ	bɤn	dɔr	saˑŋi
3D	observe religious precepts	get	six	UNIT(time,day)
prn-per	vi	vt	QP	
		EmCl-temp		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

When they observed religious precepts for six days, …

Here is a summary of the possible clause-in-clause structure.

Table 39: GP (SL) Clause-in-Clause Structure

Cl						
CL. MODIFIER	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT		CL. MODIFIER	PARENTHESIS
EmCl-temp, …	n, NP…	v, VP…	Cl, ...	dem	EmCl-temp, …	Cl

---

[127] The demonstrative here severs as a direct speech marker. See section 9.1.9. Demonstrative (dem).

11.4. Sentence-in-Sentence Embedding

When a sentence is embedded in another sentence, a 'sentence-in-sentence' phenomenon occurs. Here is an example.

M44-16.3

ဘိူည်		ကာ	နံပ်	တဲမ်	ဘိူည်		ကာ	ပဲန်	ဂြည်
bɤj		ka	nəp	tɛm	bɤj		ka	pɛn	gra·j
CONCS-even.though		NEG	able	write	CONCS-even.though		NEG	become	tell
conn-cl		neg	vi	vt	conn-cl		neg	vlink	vt

Cl.1 | Cl.2
coordinative sentence – part 1 | coordinative sentence – part 2
hypothetical concessive sent-part.1
Even though you cannot write and you won't tell

ပုံန်	အုၚ်	ပုံန်	လုံ	မီ
pʌn	ʔu·ŋ	pʌn	lo	mi
Emb- OBJ	like, love	Emb- OBJ	wish	2S

NP
Cl.2 (cont')
coordinative sentence – part 2 (cont')
hypothetical concessive sent-part.1 (cont')
what you love and wish,

မီ	ကုံန်	နံပ်	ဒါး	အော	အုၚ်	ညုံး	မီ	ဒိန်
mi	kʌn	nəp	dah	ʔɔ	ʔu·ŋ	ɲoh	mi	din
2S	COND-S	able	say	1S	love	really	2S	that
prn-per	conn-cl	vi	vt	Cl				dem

Cl.3
specified conditional sentence – part 1
hypothetical concessive sent-part.2
if only you can say 'I really love you,'

မှာန်	မီ	ကုံရ်ဆေ	ဘိုံဝ်	အော	စိ
m̥an	mi	kʌr.ve	bɤ	ʔɔ	ci·
beg	2S	pity	REQ(still)	1S	POLITE
vt	prn-per	VP		prn-per	prt-mood

Cl.4
specified conditional sentence – part 2
hypothetical concessive sent-part.2 (cont')
I beg that you still pity me please.

 Here is a summary of the possible sentence-in-sentence structure.

Table 40: GP (SL) Sentence-in-Sentence Structure

Sent	
part 1	part 2
Sent, Cl	Sent, Cl

12 *Omitting Clause Constituent*

In a GP (SL) discourse, some known or understood information may be omitted in order to make the flow more smoothly and lively, and make the unknown or new information a bit more prominent. Here are two examples.

WSR10.3

(ယာနၢင်ခုန်ဟောခံမ်)	ရဲ့	ဒေ	င်ၤပ	ဂ်ၤဝ	ပုန်	ညာ	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်
(ja.naŋ.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm)	rɛʔ	de	ŋɤp	gɤ	pʌn	ɲa	kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm
(queen)	watch	SELF	look	only	EmCl	-what	do king
(n)	VP				NP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.				COMPLEMENT		

The queen only watched what the king did.

WS16.5

နာၚ်	လၢါ	တုၤ်ဝ်း	ဒေ	ဒိုည်	ဇေၚ်	ဒဲ့	(ဟောည်ဘ္လော၊)	တ	ဟောခံမ်	လၢါ
naŋ	la·ga	tɤh	de	dɤj	veŋ	dɛh	(hɔj.blɔɣ)	ta·	hɔ.kʰəm	la·ga
princess	dragon	take	SELF	bring	back	give	(white water-snail)	DIR	king	dragon
NP	VP						(n)	RNP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.						COMPLEMENT	CLAUSE MODIFIER		

The dragon princess took and brought back (the White Water-snail) and gave (it) to the dragon king.

In colloquial GP (SL), even the verb expresses the main idea of the clause can be omitted. Its omission is established by usage and accepted through common practice. Here is an example.

MGp136

အုၚ်န်	လၢ်း	(ဒ)	အိုမ်
ʔʌn	lʌh	(da·)	ʔom
3S	move to (go)	(draw)	water
prn-per	vdir	(vt)	n
	VP		
SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.		COMPLEMENT

He went to draw water.

13 *Fronting Clause Constituent*

In a GP (SL), some clause constituents, except SUBJECT, may be fronted and put at the beginning or a forward position of a clause in order to make it prominent as being made the topic of the clause or discourse. Fronting of PREDICATE CENTRAL is usually to express particular semantic features like putting emphasis on it, prodding or goading somebody into action, giving permission or suggestion, giving an exclamation (especially if the PREDICATE CENTRAL is the emotion arousal element), etc. Here are some examples.

WSR2-36.15

ဝေင်	မီ
veŋ	mi
move back (go/come)	2S
vdir	prn-per
PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT

You go!

WSR2-46.3

အုန်	ပဲတ်	မီ	အုန်
ʔun	pɛt	mi	ʔʌn
keep, fix, save	REMAIN	2S	3S
vt	adv	prn-per	prn-per
PREDICATE C.		SUBJECT	COMPLIMENT

You still keep it!

WS34.3

ဝ	အီတ်	မီ	တ	စရောပ်
va˙	ʔit	mi	ta˙	ca˙rɔp
come, pass, enter	sleep	2S	DIR	rest-house
vi	vi	prn-per	RNP	
PREDICATE C.		SUBJECT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

You come to sleep at the rest house.

WS4.2

ကျ	ညိုးညိုး	ပုန်	ရှန်ပို	မီ
kja˙	ɲoh.ɲoh	pʌn	rʌn.po	mi
excellent	exceedingly	Emb-OBJ	dream	2S
adj	adv	prn-emb	n	prn-per
PREDICATE C.		SUBJECT		

How very excellent is what you dreamed!

Fronting of CLAUSE MODIFIER realizing recipient is common in GP (SL). This fronting structure brings a change of grammatical form used in CLAUSE MODIFIER from referential noun phrase to noun or noun phrase. Compare these two examples. The first one is in normal order of PREDICATE CENTRAL, COMPLEMENT (for patient), and CLAUSE MODIFIER (for recipient). The second one has a fronting structure of CLAUSE MODIFIER.

တာ,	ဟုိပ်	တာ,	ပေရ်	ဒဲ;	တ	ဂဲ
taɣ	hop	taɣ	per	dɛh	ta·	gɛ
spread	blanket	spread	mat	give	DIR	3P
vt	n	vt	n	vt	RNP	
PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

VP

PREDICATE

Spread the blanket and mat for them

တာ,	ဒဲ;	စဝ်	ဂဲ	ရမၣ်	စိ
taɣ	dɛh	ca·wɣ	gɛ	ra·mʌʔ	ci·
spread	give	monk	PL	seating	POLITE
vt	vt	NP		n	prt-mood
PREDICATE C.	PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER		COMPLEMENT	<mood>

Spread the seating for the monks please.

The first example is in normal order, having CLAUSE MODIFIER after the clause central; the second example contains a fronting structure of CLAUSE MODIFIER in between PREDICATE CENTRAL and COMPLEMENT. The fronting structure turns a referential noun phrase in CLAUSE MODIFIER to a noun, pronoun, or noun phrase. Then, it is the position alone differentiating the object in COMPLEMENT and the recipient in CLAUSE MODIFIER. It is noteworthy that, in whichever order, the grammatical structure showing recipient usually follows the verbs such as ဒဲ; /dɛh/ 'give,' ဒြ̣ိည် /dɤj/ 'bring,' etc. Here is another example.

MG72	စါစည်	အုိန်	ဂဲ	ပုိရိဒိ	ဒြ̣ိည်	အုိန်	ြ|ၢ||
	va.va·j	ʔʌn	gɛ	pʌn.di	dɤj	ʔʌn	gru
	relative	3S	PL	some	bring	3S	clothes
	NP				vt	prn-per	n
	SUBJECT				PREDICATE C.	CLAUSE MODIFIER	COMPLEMENT

Some of his relatives brought him clothes.

Fronting of predicate may cause some other changes in clause structure and subtly the message. Compare these two examples.

WSR2-46.8	မ̣ိုဝ်;	မိ	ခြ̣ၣ,	အော	ယ̣ို
	mɤh	mi	cʰɔɣ	ʔɔ	jo
	YES-emp	2S	deceive	1S	GUESS
	prt-v	prn-per	vt	prn-per	prt-mood
	cs-emphasis	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	COMPLEMENT	cs-mood

You deceive me, I think! [suspicious]

WS51.7	မ̣ိုဝ်;	ခြ̣ၣ,	မိ	တ	အော
	mɤh	cʰɔɣ	mi	ta·	ʔɔ
	YES-emp	lie	2S	DIR	1S
	prt-v	vi	prn-per	RNP	
	cs-emphasis	PREDICATE C.	SUBJECT	CLAUSE MODIFIER	

You lie to me! [complaining]

The first one is in the normal order that SUBJECT precedes PREDICATE, which is a transitive PREDICATE that takes a COMPLEMENT which shows the patient of the action of ခြ̣ၣ, /cʰɔɣ/ 'deceive.' The second one has a fronting structure that SUBJECT follows PREDICATE, which is a transitive PREDICATE but without any COMPLEMENT because of the unusual structure. Hence, the referential noun တ /ta·/ is added

to the patient of the action and results in a referential noun phrase putting in the position of CLAUSE MODIFIER. In addition, the verbal particle မှံၣ် /mɤh/ is at the beginning of the first example that it emphasizes the whole proposition realized by the clause. It is before the verb in the second example with fronting structure that it emphasizes the PREDICATE CENTRAL only. Hence, in a clause of fronting transitive PREDICATE, the PREDICATE CENTRAL is made more prominent not only by fronting, but also by remoting its COMPLEMENT away from the clause central to clause peripheral[128] to made it less prominent, and by bringing close to any particle for emphasis.

Fronting can also occur in other clause constituents, such as COMPLEMENT, CLAUSE MODIFIER, etc. and even a clause of a sentence. Here are some examples.

WS33.6

ကွန်မာ	အော	ကာ	ယွိၣ်
kun.ma	ʔɔ	ka	jɤ
parents	1S	NEG (IND)	possess
n	prn-per	VP	
COMPLEMENT	SUBJECT	PREDICATE C.	

I don't have parents.

WS15.11

ပြော	အော	မည်	ဒဲ့	အုံၣ်	ဗ
prɔ	ʔɔ	ma·j	dɛh	ʔʌn	va·
beside, near	1S	NEG(IMP)	IMPER	3S	come, pass, enter
RNP		neg	vt	prn-per	vt
		Cl.1			
				Cl.2	
		CC			
CLAUSE MODIFIER		PREDICATE			

Don't let it come near me.

WS51.8

အော	ဒီ	လာ်ၣ်	အုံၣ်ရ	မီ	မေန်	မီ	ကုၣ်	ကာ	ညိၣ်မ
ʔɔ	di	lʌh	ʔwər	mi	men	mi	kʌn	ka	ŋom
1S	WILL	move to	lead	2S	look	2S	COND	NEG (IND)	believe
prn-per	aux-asp	vdir	vt	prn-per	vt	prn-per	conn-cl	neg	vt
'result' clause						'condition' clause			

If you don't believe, I will go and lead you to see.

---

[128] See Table 6: Position of GP (SL) Clause Constituents in section 5. Clause Constituent.

14 *Reduplication*

Reduplication is common in GP (SL) word formation and phrase formation. It is often found in adverbs but gives nuances to the words and emphasis to the meaning. Compare these examples. The first pair contrast in generalness; the second pair contrast in mood.

အ့ဲန်	ပုင်	ဖာည်	vs	အ့ဲန်	ပုင်	ဖာည်ဖာည်
?ʌn	pu·ŋ	pʰaj		?ʌn	pu·ŋ	pʰaj.pʰaj
3S	run	fast		3S	run	fast
prn-per	vi	adv		prn-per	vi	adv
He runs fast				He ran fast (with a purpose)		

ဟောမ်	ဖာည်	vs	ဟောမ်	ဖာည်ဖာည်
hɔm	pʰaj		hɔm	pʰaj.pʰaj
eat	fast		eat	fast
vt	adv		vt	adv
(Someone) eats fast. (Indicative)			Eat fast! (Imperative)	

Reduplication can be a morpheme or just a part of the morpheme which is reduplicated in a word or a phrase. AA, ABB, AABB, ABAC, (der-A)(der-B), and ABA'B' are some usual reduplication patterns of morpheme. Here are some examples.

Reduplication of Morpheme						
Type	Lexical Form		Part 1	Part 2	Part 3	Part 4
AA	ညှိုးညှိုး /ɲ̥oh.ɲ̥oh/	'very'	ညှိုး /ɲ̥oh/	ညှိုး /ɲ̥oh/		
ABB	ကျညှိုးညှိုး /kja·.ɲ̥oh.ɲ̥oh/	'excellent'	ကျ /kji·/ 'good'	ညှိုး /ɲ̥oh/	ညှိုး /ɲ̥oh/	
AABB	ယူးယူးယ့်ရ်ယ့်ရ် /juh.juh.jʌr.jʌr/	'shake, tremble'	ယူး /juh/	ယူး /juh/	ယ့်ရ် /jʌr/	ယ့်ရ် /jʌr/
ABAC	လည်ဝလည်ဇေင် /la·j va· la·j veŋ/	'divided, dispersed, varied'	လည် /la·j/ 'various'	ဝ /va·/ 'come, pass'	လည် /la·j/ 'various'	ဇေင် /veŋ/ 'move back'
(der-A)(der-B)	ကုိန်ဒါ့ ကုိန်ဒျံမ် /kʌn.dʌ? kʌn.djəm/	'remote area'	ကုိန်- /kʌn/	ဒါ့ /dʌ?/	ကုိန်- /kʌn/	ဒျံမ် /djəm/
ABA'B'	ဖိုမ်ပျောနွံရ်းျျန် /pʰɤm.pjɔ nwəɹ.rjən/	'happy'	ဖိုမ် /pʰɤm/ 'heart'	ပျော /pjɔ/ 'happy'	နွံရ်း /nwəɹ/ 'heart'	ျျန် /rjən/ 'happy'

Parts of a morpheme, especially in creating new words, can also be reduplicated in order to form special patterns. Alliteration and rhyme are common reduplication patterns. Alliteration is repeating the onset of a syllable; rhyme is repeating the rhyme of a syllable. Here are some examples.

Alliteration and Rhyme					
Type	Lexical Form		Part 1	Part 2	Part 3	Part 4
Alliteration	ဘၣ်ဘိုၣ်	'many'	ဘၣ်	ဘိုၣ်		
	/bʌʔ.bɤ/		/bʌʔ/	/bɤ/		
ABAC, Alliteration	ယာဒီယာဒါ	'hesitate'	ယာ	ဒီ	ယာ	ဒါ
	/ja.di.ja.da/		/ja/	/di/	/ja/	/da/
(der-A)(der-B), Alliteration	ကွၣ်ဇိကွၣ်ဇာ	'instantly'	ကွၣ်-	ဇိ	ကွၣ်-	ဇာ
	/kʌn.ɟo.kʌn.ɟa/		/kʌn/	/ɟo/	/kʌn/	/ɟa/
AABB, Rhyme	စိမ်စိမ်ဟိမ်ဟိမ်	'warmly welcome'	စိမ်	စိမ်	ဟိမ်	ဟိမ်
	/com.com.hom.hom/		/com/	/com/	/hom/	/hom/

A-A-neg-A is a special reduplication that only occurs in verbal phrases. 'A' is a verbal form, which usually is verb; 'neg' refers to negator, which usually is the indicative negator ကာ /ka/, showing the uncertainty or imcompleteness of the action. Here are some examples.

A-A-neg-A Reduplication					
Lexical Form		Part 1	Part 2	Part 3	Part 4
နံပ်နံပ်ကာနံပ်	'know a smattering of sth. (know imcompletely)'	နံပ်	နံပ်	ကာ	နံပ်
/nəp nəp ka nəp/		/nəp/	/nəp/	/ka/	/nəp/
ထာၣ်ထာၣ်ကာထာၣ်	'suspect (think uncertainly)'	ထာၣ်	ထာၣ်	ကာ	ထာၣ်
/tʰaŋ tʰaŋ ka tʰaŋ/		/tʰaŋ/	/tʰaŋ/	/ka/	/tʰaŋ/
ဒါ့ဒါ့ကာဒါ့	'speak imcompletely'	ဒါ့	ဒါ့	ကာ	ဒါ့
/dah dah ka dah/		/dah/	/dah/	/ka/	/dah/
မိဝ့်မိဝ့်ကာမိဝ့်	'ridiculous, paradoxical, specious, etc (not completely true/right)'	မိဝ့်	မိဝ့်	ကာ	မိဝ့်
/mɤh mɤh ka mɤh/		/mɤh/	/mɤh/	/ka/	/mɤh/

Reduplication can also occur in clause constituent of the same kind. Instead of a coordination structure,[129] reduplication of the grammatical construction is quite often employed. Here are some examples.

MG461 အွၣ်   ဆုတောၣ် | တ   ဖြာ | တ   ကွရံနံမ် |
       ʔʌn   suˑtɔŋ | taˑ   pʰra | taˑ   kʌr.nəm |
       3S   pray | DIR   god | DIR   spirit |
       prn-per   vi | n-ref   n | n-ref   n |
       SUBJECT   PREDICATE C. | CLAUSE MODIFIER | CLAUSE MODIFIER |
       He prayed to the Buddha and the spirits

WS33.3 မီ   ယိုဝ့်   ကော | ဒေ   ကွၣ် | ဒေ   မာ |
        mi   jɤ   kɔ | de   kun | de   ma |
        2S   possess   Y/N? | SELF   father | SELF   mother |
        prn-per   vt   q | prn-refl n | prn-refl n |
        SUBJECT   PREDICATE cs-mood | POST-C.   COMPLEMENT | POST-C. COMPLEMENT |
                  C. | MODIFIER | MODIFIER |
        Do you have parents?

---

[129] For reduplication in formation of coordinative phrase and coordinative sentence, see section 10.1.1.1. Coordination (COOR) Noun Phrase, 10.2.2. Verb-Object (VO) Verbal Phrase, 10.2.5. Coordination (COOR) Verbal Phrase, and 7.2.10. Coordinative (COOR) Sentence.

WSR2-21.1	အော	ဒီ	တို့ဝ်း	အော	လူၟမ်	အုံန်	ပဲန်	ကွၟ်န်	အော	ၐါ	အော
	ʔɔ	di	tɤh	ʔɔ	lum	ʔʌn	pɛn	kwən	ʔɔ	va	ʔɔ
	1S	WILL	take	1S	nurse	3S	become	child	1S	kid	1S
	prn-per	VP				prn-per	vlink	n	prn-per	n	prn-per
								CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE	CENTRAL NP	ATTRIBUTIVE

SUBJECT PREDICATE C. COMPLEMENT

Cl.2

Cl.1

I will takecare of it and it becomes my own child,

WSR2-47.5	မိုၟ်း	ဒိုည်,	ဆဲင်	မိုၟ်း	ဒိုည်,	ြ့ၟိရ်	ပည်	ရလော,
	mɤh	dojɤ	sɛŋ	mɤh	dojɤ	kʰrir	paˑj	raˑlɔɤ
	be	all	gem	be	all	gold	all	valley
	VP						QP	
	PREDICATE						CLAUSE MODIFIER	

All the valley was gem and gold.

References

Adams, Karen L. 1991. A comparison of the numeral classification of humans in Mon-Khmer. Mon-Khmer Studies, 21:107-129.

_____. 1991. The influence of non-Austroasiatic languages on numeral classification in Austroasiatic. Journal of the American Oriental Society, 111(1):62-81.

Alves, Mark J. 2001. distributional properties of causative verbs in Mon-Khmer languages. Mon-Khmer Studies, 31:107-120.

Diffloth, Gérard. 1982. Subclassification of Palaungic and notes on 'P'uman'. Presented at the 15th Annual International Conference on Sino-Tibetan Languages and Linguistics, Beijing.

_____. 1991. Palaungic vowels in Mon-Khmer perspective. In Austroasiatic Languages: Essays in Honor of H. L. Shorto, ed. Jeremy H. C. S. Davidson, 13-27. SOAS, University of London.

Hopple, Paulette. nominalization, relativization and genitivization in selected Palaungic languages. Presented at the 18th Annual Meeting of the Southeast Asian Linguistics Society (SEAL18). Universiti Kebangsaan Malaysia, Bangi.

Janzen, Hermann, and M. Janzen. 1972. Grammar analysis of Pale clauses and phrases. Journal of the Burma Research Society 55:47-99.

Janzen, Hermann. 1976. Structure and function of clauses and phrases in Pale. In Austroasiatic Studies, ed. Philip N. Jenner, Laurence C. Thompson and Stanley Starosta, vol. 2:669-691. Honolulu: University of Hawaii.

_____. 1976. The system of verb-aspect words in Pale. In Austroasiatic Studies, ed. Philip N. Jenner, Laurence C. Thompson and Stanley Starosta, vol. 2:659-667. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

_____. 1978. A phonological description of Pale in comparison with Gold- and Rumai-Palaung. Presented at the 2nd International Conference on Austroasiatic Linguistics, Mysore, India.

_____. 1987. Form and function of topicalization in discourse in Thai and Pale. Ph. D dissertation, The William Carey International University.

_____. 1992. Form and function of topicalization in Southern Ta-ang discourse. Presented at the 24th International Conference on Sino-Tibetan Languages and Linguistics (ICSTLL). Bangkok, Thailand.

Li, Charles N. and Thompson, Sandra A. 1976. Subject and topic: A new typology of language. In Subject and Topic ed. Charles N. Li, 457-489. London , New York: Academic Press.

Milne, Leslie. 1921. An Elementary Palaung Grammar. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

_____. 1931. A Dictionary of English-Palaung and Palaung-English. Rangoon: Supt., Govt. Print. and Stationery.

Mitani, Yasuyuki. 1977. Palaung dialects: a preliminary comparison. Southeast Asian Studies 15.2:192-212.

_____. 1978. Problems in the classification of Palaungic. Presented at the 2nd International Conference on Austroasiatic Linguistics, Mysore, India.

Parkin, Robert. 1991. A Guide to Austroasiatic Speakers and their Languages. Oceanic Linguistics Special Publication, vol. 23, 104-115. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

Proschan, Frank. 1996. A survey of Khmuic and Palaungic languages in Laos and Vietnam. In Pan-Asiatic Linguistics: Proceedings of the Fourth International Symposium on Languages and Linguistics, Jan 8-10, 1996, vol. 3:895-919. Bangkok: Mahidol University.

Rischel, Jørgen. 1997. Typology and reconstruction of numeral systems: the case of Austroasiatic. In Linguistic reconstruction and typology, Trends in Linguistics, vol. 96, ed. Jacek Fisiak, 273-312. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter.

SEALANG. Mon-Khmer Languages—working family tree. http://sealang. net/monkhmer. Accessed Mar 13, 2012.

Shorto, Harry L. 1960. Word and syllable patterns in Palaung. Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies 23:544-567.

_____. 1976. The vocalism of Proto-Mon-Khmer. In Austroasiatic studies, ed. Philip N. Jenner, Laurence C. Thompson and Stanley Starosta, 2:1041-1067. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

Sidwell, Paul. 2003. Study of a language family: Austroasiatic. Lecture 9: Palaungic. http://www.ling.hawaii.edu/faculty/stampe/AA-pj/AA-Sidwell/ AAlecture9-Palaungic.html. Accessed on September 7, 2009.

_____. 2005. Proto-Katuic phonology and the sub-grouping of Mon-Khmer languages. Papers from the 15th Meeting of the Southeast Asian Linguistics Society (SEALSXV), ed. Paul Sidwell, 193-204. Canberra, Pacific Linguistics.

_____. 2006. Mon-Khmer languages. http://people.anu.edu.au/~a108009/ languages/Palaungic.html. Accessed September 7, 2009.

_____. 2007. Comparative Mon-Khmer linguistics in the 20th century: Where from, where to?. Presented at the 3rd International Conference of Austroasiatic Linguistics, Deccan College, Pune, India.

_____. 2007. Proto-Mon-Khmer vocalism: moving on from Shorto's 'alternances'. Presented at the 17th Annual Meeting of the Southeast Asian Linguistics Society (SEALSXVII), University of Maryland, College Park.

_____. 2008. Palaungic. http://people.anu.edu.au/~a108009/languages/ Palaungic.html. Accessed September 7, 2009.

Thomas, David and Robert K. Headley. 1970. More on Mon-Khmer sub-groupings. Lingua 25:398-418.

Thomas, David D. 1964. A survey of Austroasiatic and Mon-Khmer comparative studies. Mon-Khmer Studies 1:149-163.

_____. 1973. A note on the branches of Mon-Khmer. Mon-Khmer Studies 4:139-141.

_____. 1976. South Bahnaric and other Mon-Khmer numeral systems. Linguistics 14(174):65-80.

Appendix: Golden Palaung Lexicon

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
1	ကဆီး	/ka·sih/	'crack' (v.)
2	ကဆီး	/ka·sih/	'beauty spot' (n.)
3	ကဆေ	/ka·se/	'be ashamed'
4	ကဆင်	/ka·səŋ/	'joint'
5	ကဆင်တီ	/ka·səŋ.ti/	'knuckle'
6	ကဆရ်း	/ka·sər̥/	'thunder' (n.)
7	ကဆရ်းတဲး	/ka·sər̥.tɛh/	'thunder' (v.)
8	ကၟွတ်	/ka·ɟwət/	UNIT (water drop)
9	ကညောမ်	/ka·ɲɔm/	'child, youth'
10	ကတဲ	/ka·tɛ/	'ground, land'
11	ကတံမ်	/ka·təm/	'lay egg' (v.)
12	ကတံမ်	/ka·təm/	'egg' (n.)
13	ကတ်မ်	/ka·tʌm/	'bottom'
14	ကတ်မ်ပွေါင်အိုမ်	/ka·tʌm plɔŋ.ʔom/	'riverbed'
15	ကတ်ရ်	/ka·tʌr/	'cover'
16	ကဒေ	/ka·de/	'ten million (10,000,000)'
17	ကဒည်	/ka·da·jʔ/	'insult'
18	ကဒည်ကဲႉရဲႇ	/ka·da·jʔ.kɛˋrɛˊ/	'insult'
19	ကဗဲ	/ka·vɛʔ/	'play'
20	ကဗဲအိုမ်	/ka·vɛʔ.ʔom/	'play water'
21	ကဖျာင်	/ka·faŋ/	'fireplace'
22	ကဖျာင်တိုင်ပေါမ်	/ka·faŋ tuɯŋ.pɔm/	'kitchen'
23	ကာ	/ka/	'fish' (n.)
24	ကာ	/ka/	NEG (IND)
25	ကာ-	/ka-/	'fish'
26	ကာကျ	/ka.kja·/	'bad'
27	ကာခြိရ်	/ka.kʰrir/	'goldfish'
28	ကာတ်မ်	/ka.tɤm/	NEVER
29	ကာနပ်	/ka.nəp/	'SUSPECION'
30	ကာ နပ် ခိုည် ည	/ka.nəp.kʰɤj.ɲa/	'what can I do?'
31	ကာဘ်န်	/ka.bɤn/	'cannot'
32	ကာမ်ဝ်း	/ka.mɤh/	QUE-RHE.neg
33	ကာယာႇ	/ka.jaˊ/	NOT DARE
34	ကာရာင်	/ka.raŋ/	CONCS-let it be
35	ကာဗ်လ	/ka.vi.la·/	'Kavila'
36	ကာႇ	/kaˊ/	'branch'
37	ကာႇ	/kaˊ/	UNIT (branch)
38	ကားး	/kah/	'untie, break off'
39	ကားးဘ	/kah.bu/	'be weaned'
40	ကု	/ku/	'person'
41	ကု	/ku/	UNIT (person)

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
42	ကဲ့ႛရဲ့	/kɛˇ.rɛˇ/	'insult'
43	ကဲ့	/kɛh/	'keep off'
44	ကော	/kɔ/	Y/N?
45	ကံင်	/kəŋ/	'hold'
46	ကံင်ကဲ့	/kəŋ.kɛh/	'elbow'
47	ကာင်ဟာဝ်	/kaŋ.haw/	'heaven'
48	ကုင်	/ku·ŋ/	'town, country'
49	ကုင်ရဒံန်ရခဲ	/ku·ŋ.ra·dən.ra·kʰrɛ/	'fortress'
50	ကိုင်	/koŋ/	'hollow' (adj.)
51	ကိုင်	/koŋ/	'hole, cavity' (n.)
52	ကောည်	/kɔj/	'alone'
53	ကောည်လိုည်	/kɔj.loj/	CONTR-but
54	ကံတ်	/kət/	'cold (person)'
55	ကံတ်ကံတ်မည်မည်	/kət.kət.ma·j.ma·j/	'fever'
56	ကံတ်ငံင်	/kət.ŋəŋ/	'cold'
57	ကီတ်	/kit/	'gather (things)'
58	ကိုတ်	/kɤt/	'give birth'
59	ကာန်	/kan/	'work'
60	ကီန်	/kin/	'curse, swear' (v.)
61	ကီန်	/kin/	'curse' (n.)
62	ကုန်	/kun/	'father'
63	ကုန်ဒျိုတ်	/kun.djət/	'uncle'
64	ကုန်ဒျိုတ်ကုန်အာန်	/kun.djət kun.ʔan/	'uncles'
65	ကုန်မာ	/kun.ma/	'parents'
66	ကုန်အာန်	/kun.ʔan/	'uncle'
67	ကေန်	/ken/	'poor' (adj.)
68	ကေန်	/ken/	'hardship, distress' (n.)
69	ကုန်	/kʌn/	'mother-in-law'
70	ကုန်	/kʌn/	'at the time of (near future)' (n-ref.)
71	ကုန်	/kʌn/	CHRON
72	ကုန်	/kʌn/	CAUSE
73	ကုန်	/kʌn/	COND-if, if only
74	ကုန်ဇကုန်ဇာ	/kʌn.ɟo.kʌn.ɟa/	'instantly'
75	ကုန်ဇင်	/kʌn.ɟəŋ/	'set up'
76	ကုန်ဇတ်	/kʌn.ɟwət/	UNIT (drop)
77	ကုန်ဒါႛ	/kʌn.daˇ/	'half'
78	ကုန်ဒီ	/kʌn.di/	'between, the middle/centre of'
79	ကုန်ဒါ်ကုန်ဒျိုမ်	/kʌn.dʌʔ kʌn.djəm/	'remote area'
80	ကုန်ဒုင်	/kʌn.du·ŋ/	'flat' (adj.)
81	ကုန်ဒုင်	/kʌn.du·ŋ/	'plain' (n.)
82	ကုန်ဒေါမ်	/kʌn.dɔm/	'adopt'
83	ကုန်ကြုႛ	/kʌn.bruh/	'growl'
84	ကုန်ဘြာန်	/kʌn.bran/	'hungry for'
85	ကုန်ဘြာန်အုံမ်	/kʌn.bran.ʔom/	'thirsty'
86	ကုန်ဘျ	/kʌn.blja·/	UNIT (think flat thing)
87	ကုန်မ	/kʌn.mɛ/	'new (thing)'
88	ကုန်မဲ့	/kʌn.mɤh/	CONTR-in case of
89	ကုန်ဟဲ့	/kʌn.hɛh/	(horse) neigh
90	ကုန်အာင်	/kʌn.ʔaŋ/	'bone'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
91	ကုန်အာင်ကာ	/kʌn.ʔaŋ.ka/	'fish bone'
92	ကုန်အှုရ်ဆဝ့်ရ်	/kʌn.ʔur.saˑgʌr/	'boundary'
93	ကှုပ	/kup/	'bow'
94	ကောပ်	/kɔp/	'horsefly, gadfly' (n.)
95	ကောပ်	/kɔp/	'reason, because of' (n-ref.)
96	ကောပ်	/kɔp/	CAUSE
97	ကောပ်ပိဝ်	/kɔp.pɤ/	CAUSE-so
98	ကုပ်ကုပ်	/kʌp.kʌp/	'turtle'
99	ကံမ်	/kəm/	'brown' (adj.)
100	ကံမ်	/kəm/	'pencil, pen' (n.)
101	ကှိရ်ဆီ	/kɯr.si/	'lemon'
102	ကှိရ်ည	/kɯr.ɲa/	'lord'
103	ကှိရ်ညပုံရ်မာင်	/kɯr.ɲa.pʌr.maŋ/	'chief the lord'
104	ကှိရ်နံမ်	/kɯr.nem/	'god'
105	ကှိရ်ပိုည်	/kɯr.pɤj/	'roof'
106	ကှိရ်ဗျုံရ်	/kɯr.vjər/	'around'
107	ကှိရ်	/kɤr/	'ten'
108	ကုရ်ကား	/kʌr.kah/	'distinguish'
109	ကုရ်ဂါး	/kʌr.gah/	'crack'
110	ကုရ်ဂေတ်	/kʌr.get/	'hope'
111	ကုရ်စ	/kʌr.cuˑ/	'gather, meet together' (v.)
112	ကုရ်စ	/kʌr.cuˑ/	'meeting' (n.)
113	ကုရ်စကုရ်မိန်	/kʌr.cu.kʌr.mon/	'discuss' (v.)
114	ကုရ်စကုရ်မိန်	/kʌr.cu.kʌr.mon/	'meeting' (n.)
115	ကုရ်ဆဲး	/kʌr.sɛh/	'tear'
116	ကုရ်ဆိုပ	/kʌr.sɯp/	'join sth. together'
117	ကုရ်ဇောည်	/kʌr.ɟɔj/	'assist/help each other'
118	ကုရ်တွး	/kʌr.tuh/	'encounter' (v.)
119	ကုရ်တွး	/kʌr.tuh/	'experience' (n.)
120	ကုရ်ထေင်	/kʌr.tʰeŋ/	'dispute' (v.)
121	ကုရ်ထေင်	/kʌr.tʰeŋ/	'dispute' (n.)
122	ကုရ်နံမ်	/kʌr.nəm/	'spirit'
123	ကုရ်နေရ်	/kʌr.n̥er/	'similar to each other'
124	ကုရ်ပိန်	/kʌr.pən/	'rotate'
125	ကုရ်ပိမ်	/kʌr.pom/	UNIT (group, general things)
126	ကုရ်ယံရ်း	/kʌr.jər̥/	'beautiful'
127	ကုရ်ယံရ်းကုံရ်ဒံင်	/kɯr.jər̥.kɯr.dəŋ/	'beautiful'
128	ကုရ်ရိက်	/kʌr.rək/	'love each other'
129	ကုရ်လာကာ	/kʌr.la.ka/	'gill'
130	ကုရ်လှုင်	/kʌr.l̥eŋ/	'play together'
131	ကုရ်လှာည်	/kʌr.l̥aj/	'change'
132	ကုရ်ဝေ	/kʌr.ve/	'pity'
133	ကုရ်ဗျုံရ်	/kʌr.vjər/	'surrounding'
134	ကုရ်ဟှုပ	/kʌr.hup/	'hut'
135	ကုရ်အှုင်	/kʌr.ʔuˑŋ/	'like each other'
136	ကုရ်အှုင်ကုံရ်ရိက်	/kʌr.ʔuˑŋ.kʌr.rək/	'like each other'
137	ကှိဝ်	/kɤ/	'hope for'
138	ကျ	/kjaˑ/	'goodness'
139	ကျကျနန	/kjaˑ.kjaˑ.naˑ.naˑ/	'excellent' (adj.)

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
140	ကျကျနန	/kjaˑ.kjaˑ.naˑ.naˑ/	'very well' (adv.)
141	ကျလ	/kjaˑ.laˑ/	'good'
142	ကျူညှိုး	/kju.ŋoh/	'very difficult'
143	ကျုံရ	/kjər/	UNIT (time, month)
144	ကြို	/kro/	'basket'
145	ကြိုင်	/kruˑŋ/	'drum'
146	ကြိုင်ဟောမ်ပေါမ်	/kruˑŋ hɔm pɔm/	'drum(biggest)'
147	ကြိုည်	/krɤj/	'time not yet reaching'
148	ကြိုည်	/krɤj/	'before'
149	ကြိုည်	/krɤj/	CHRON-not yet
150	ကြိုလာ,	/klo.laˀ/	'cooking utensils'
151	ကြိုအဲင်	/klo.ʔɛŋ/	'glazed earthen pot'
152	ကြိုင်	/kləŋ/	'support'
153	ကြိုုဝ်း	/klɤh/	'enter'
154	ကွတ်	/kwət/	'serve (duty)' (v.)
155	ကွတ်	/kwət/	'load, burden' (n.)
156	ကွန်	/kwən/	'give birth' (v.)
157	ကွန်	/kwən/	'son, daughter' (n.)
158	ကွန်-	/kwən-/	'young (person, animal), small (thing)'
159	ကွန်ကုန်ဒျိုတ်ကုန်အာန်	/kwən kun.djət kun.ʔan/	'nephew, niece'
160	ကွန်နာင်	/kwən.naŋ/	'princess'
161	ကွန်ဟျာ	/kwən.hja/	'old' (adj.)
162	ကွန်ဟျာ	/kwən.hja/	'old people' (n.)
163	ကွန်ဟောည်	/kwən.hɔj/	'little water-snail'
164	ကွန်အိပ်န်	/kwən.ʔi.pʌn/	'girl'
165	ကွန်အီမဲ	/kwən.ʔi.mɛ/	'son'
166	ကွန်အီမဲ	/kwən.ʔi.mɛ/	'boy'
167	ေချာ,	/cʰɔˀ/	'lie, deceive'
168	ချိုင်	/cʰəŋ/	'bed'
169	ချုင်	/cʰuˑŋ/	'sour sauce'
170	ချုင်ချိုင်	/cʰuˑŋ.cʰəŋ/	'amulet'
171	ချုမ်	/cʰum/	'lose'
172	ခုန်	/kʰu.nʌ/	'within the span of' (inside)
173	ခုန်	/kʰu.nʌ/	LOC
174	ခဲ	/kʰɛˀ/	'guest'
175	ေခါ	/kʰɔ/	'hard'
176	ခို	/kʰo/	'red'
177	ခိုရိုး,ရိုး	/kʰo.roh.roh/	'very red'
178	ခိုည်	/kʰɤj/	'be like'
179	ခိုည်	/kʰɤj/	'like, as, in the same way'
180	ခိုည်	/kʰɤj/	CAUSE.as
181	ခိုည်ေမာ	/kʰɤj.mɔ/	'how?'
182	ခိုည်လာ,	/kʰɤj.laˀ/	ANALOG-as if
183	ခုန်	/kʰun/	'run' (v.)
184	ခုန်-	/kʰun-/	HONORIFIC (royal, male)
185	ခုန်ဖိ	/kʰun.pʰi/	'spirit'
186	ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	/kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm/	'king'
187	ခုရ	/kʰur/	'blow' (v.)
188	ခုရ	/kʰur/	'wind, air' (n.)

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
189	ခဲ	/kʰrɛ/	'protect'
190	ခဲတ်	/kʰrɛt/	'deft'
191	ချမ်	/kʰrʌm/	'rich' (adj.)
192	ချမ်	/kʰrʌm/	'fortune' (n.)
193	ခြရ်	/kʰrir/	'gold'
194	ချဝမျို	/kʰrɤ.mjo/	'race'
195	ဂ	/ga·/	'bite'
196	ဂေ	/ge/	'pine'
197	ဂဲ	/gɛ/	3P
198	ဂဲ	/gɛ/	PL
199	ဂဲတည်	/gɛ.ta·j/	'those ones (person or thing)'
200	ဂဲအီိ	/gɛ.ʔɯ/	'these ones (person or thing)'
201	ဂါင်	/gaŋ/	'house'
202	ဂုံည်ဂုံည်	/goj.goj/	'not fit'
203	ဂံတ်	/gət/	CAUSE-DED-so.much.that
204	ဂိပ်	/gɤp/	PROG-even
205	ဂါရ်	/gir/	3D
206	ဂါရ်	/gar/	DUAL
207	ဂါရ်	/gar/	'and'
208	ဂရ်	/gʌr/	'play (musical instrument)'
209	ဂိဝ်	/gɤ/	'only' (adj.)
210	ဂိဝ်	/gɤ/	EMP-only
211	ချု	/gru/	'clothes'
212	ချုခြိုမ်	/gru.grɤm/	'thing'
213	ကြည်	/gra·j/	'tell'
214	ကြည်လ	/gra·j.la·/	'tell-good'
215	ကြည်လွတ်	/gra·j.lut/	'tell-bad'
216	ကြည်လွတ်ကြည်လ	/gra·j.lut.gra·j.la·/	'slander, gossip'
217	ချုပ်	/grup/	'do obeisance'
218	ကြည်	/glaj/	'expose'
219	ဂွင်း	/gwəŋ/	UNIT (ring)
220	ဂွည်	/gwa·j/	'dwell, stay'
221	ဂွည်	/gwa·j	'be present'
222	ငါ	/ŋa/	'clear'
223	ငဲ	/ŋɛ/	'speak, greet' (v.)
224	ငဲ	/ŋɛ/	'word, language, speech' (n.)
225	ငဲခဲ	/ŋɛ.kʰɛ/	'Chinese language'
226	ငဲတအာင်း	/ŋɛ.ta·ʔaŋ/	'Ta'ang language'
227	ငင်	/ŋəŋ/	'cold (thing)'
228	ငါည်	/ŋaj/	'face'
229	ငါည်	/ŋaj/	'eye'
230	ငါည်ဘြာင်	/ŋaj.braŋ/	'trachoma'
231	ငါည်အံပ်	/ŋaj.ʔəp/	'blind' (adj.)
232	ငါည်အံပ်	/ŋaj.ʔəp/	'blind people' (n.)
233	ငိပ်	/ŋɤp/	'look, look at'
234	ငါမ်	/ŋam/	'sweet'
235	ငါမ်ပိုး	/ŋam.poh/	'nectar'
236	ငွရ်းဒါင်	/ŋwəṛ.daŋ/	'with great value'
237	စရောပ်	/ca·rɔp/	'rest-house'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
238	စရဲတ်	/ca·rɛt/	'few, little'
239	စလှင်ဆလော,	/ca·luŋ.sa·lɔɣ/	'plates and bowls'
240	စိ	/ci·/	POLITE
241	စိ	/ci/	'inlay' (v.)
242	စိ	/ci/	CHRON-temporal
243	စိပဲန်	/ci.pɛn/	CHRON-finally
244	စု	/cu·/	'meet'
245	စေတနာ	/ce.ta·na/	'kindness'
246	စိင်	/cəŋ/	RESULT
247	စိင်ပဲန်	/cəŋ.pɛn/	CHRON-finally
248	စာင်	/caŋ/	'hire'
249	စုန်	/cun/	'time close to'
250	စုပ်	/cop/	UNIT (small bag)
251	စိမ်	/cəm/	'glass' (n.)
252	စိမ်	/cəm/	GEN
253	စိမ်	/cəm/	CONCS-however
254	စိမ်ဘာနဂို	/cəm.bi.ni·.go/	'Chambanago'
255	စုမ်	/com/	'immerse'
256	စုမ်စုမ်ဟိုမ်ဟိုမ်	/com.com.hom.hom/	'warmly welcome'
257	စဝ်	/ca·w/	'master, monk'
258	စဝ်-	/ca·w-/	HONORIFIC (religious)
259	ဆကူပ်	/sa·.kup/	'place sth. face down'
260	ဆေ	/sa·ge/	'abuse, ill treat'
261	ဆဂိုရ်	/sa·gʌr/	'boundary'
262	ဆင်ိ	/sa·ŋi/	'sun'
263	ဆင်ိ	/sa·ŋi/	'day'
264	ဆင်ိ	/sa·ŋi/	UNIT(time,day)
265	ဆင်ၟ်ည်	/sa·ŋaj/	'far from'
266	ဆတိုင်	/sa·tɯŋ/	'hear, listen, feel'
267	ဆေထ	/sa·tʰe/	'rich man'
268	ဆဒေါ	/sa·dɔ/	'jacket'
269	ဆန်မ်	/sa·nʌm/	'year' (n.)
270	ဆန်မ်	/sa·nʌm/	UNIT (time, year)
271	ဆန်မ်	/sa·nʌm/	'cure' (v.)
272	ဆန်မ်	/sa·nʌm/	'medicine' (n.)
273	ဆပ့်တ်	/sa·pwət/	'(head) turban'
274	ဆပြိတ်	/sa·prwət/	'turban'
275	ဆမာ	/sa·ma/	'prone to'
276	ဆမာယော	/sa·ma.jɔ/	'coward'
277	ဆလော,	/sa·lɔɣ/	'cup, plate'
278	ဆလော,ရှိန်	/sa·lɔɣ.rʌn/	'silver bowl'
279	ဆီ	/si/	'louse'
280	ဆီး	/sih/	'scratch'
281	ဆုတောင်	/su·.tɔŋ/	'pray'
282	ဆု	/su/	'be sick, be hurt' (v.)
283	ဆု	/su/	'grandchild' (n.)
284	ဆုဆာ	/su.sa/	'Susa'
285	ဆုရာ	/su.ra/	'descendent'
286	ဆုတ်	/sut/	'order' (v.)

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
287	ဆွတ်	/sut/	'mosquito net (n.)'
288	ဆွမ်	/sum/	UNIT (a pair)
289	ဆေ	/se/	'what?'
290	ဆေဆေ	/se.se/	'always'
291	ဆေ...ညာ	/se/.../ɲa/	'why'
292	ဆေအၢန်ညာ	/se.ʔʌn.ɲa/	'why'
293	ဆေအၢန်မꭓဝ်း	/se.ʔʌn.mɤh/	'why'
294	ဆဲး	/sɛh/	'pare' (v.)
295	ဆဲး	/sɛh/	'outside'
296	ဆဲး	/sɛh/	'far side over a hill' (n-ref.)
297	ဆဲး	/sɛh/	PROG-not only, besides
298	ဆဲးဒိန်	/sɛh.din/	PROG-besides that
299	ဆော့တဲ	/sɔʔ.tɛ/	'observe religious precepts'
300	ဆၢ်တဲ	/sʌʔ.tɛ/	'fast'
301	ဆၢ်း	/sʌh/	EM-get attention
302	ဆဲင်	/sɛŋ/	'gem'
303	ဆဲင်ခြိရ	/sɛŋ.kʰrir/	'treasure'
304	ဆၢင်မၢ်း	/sʌŋ.m̥ʌh/	'anything'
305	ဆာန်	/san/	'million (1,000,000)'
306	ဆီန်	/sin/	'ripe, cooked'
307	ဆီန်	/sin/	DESIRE
308	ဆဲန်	/sɛn/	'lac (100,000)'
309	ဆၢန်အၢယေန်	/son.ʔu.jen/	'garden'
310	ဆၢန်	/sʌn/	DESIRE
311	ဆၢန်ဂိဝ်း	/sʌn.gɤh/	'look upward'
312	ဆၢန်ꭓမ်	/sʌn.ɟrm/	UNIT(a fistful of)
313	ဆိပ်	/suɯp/	CONTINUE
314	ဆာမ်ဘုတၢရ	/sam.buˑ.taˑ.ra/	'ocean'
315	ဆီမ်-	/sim-/	'bird'
316	ဆိမ်	/sɤm/	'night'
317	ဆိမ်	/sɤm/	UNIT (time, night)
318	ဆိမ်လာ	/sɤm.la/	'last night'
319	ဆိရ	/sor/	'hill, mountain'
	ဆွိင်ြဘွိင်	/swəŋ.brwəŋ/	'retrogress'
320	ꭓု	/ɟu/	'meet'
321	ꭓုငဲ	/ɟu.ŋɛ/	'obey'
322	ꭓုး	/ɟuh/	'start to, begin to'
323	ꭓုးဖိန်	/ɟuh.pʰon/	'fourth'
324	ꭓုးအ	/ɟuh.ʔu/	'first'
325	ꭓုးအၢရ	/ɟuh.ʔar/	'second'
326	ꭓုးအွည်	/ɟuh.ʔwaˑj/	'third'
327	ꭓၢ်း	/ɟʌh/	'fall, decline'
328	ꭓိင်	/ɟeŋ/	'stand'
329	ꭓာင်	/ɟaŋ/	'tower'
330	ꭓိင်	/ɟuɯŋ/	'sew'
331	ꭓောည်	/ɟɔj/	'help'
332	ꭓိန်ꭓိန်	/ɟin.ɟin/	(sound from a vehicle)
333	ꭓောမ်	/ɟɔm/	'follow'
334	ꭓောမ်	/ɟɔm/	'along with'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
335	ဇုံမ်	/ɟom/	'draw out'
336	ဇာရ်	/ɟar/	'high'
337	ဇုရ်း	/ɟɤ̰ɤ̰/	'buy'
338	ဇူဝ်	/ɟɯ/	'call'
339	ဇူင်	/ɟɯʔ/	'take time'
340	ဇူတ်	/ɟwət/	'drip'
341	ညာ	/ɲa/	'do'
342	ညာ ခိုည် ဒီန်	/ɲa.kʰɤj.din/	'like that'
343	ညောညော	/ɲɔ.ɲɔ/	'very ugly'
344	ညင်	/ɲəŋ/	UNIT (string)
345	ညောမ်	/ɲɔm/	'dye'
346	ညဝ်	/ɲaˑw/	'tease, ignite'
347	ညှုဲ့း	/ɲ̥oh/	'really, truly'
348	ညှုဲ့းညှုဲ့း	/ɲ̥oh. ɲ̥oh/	'exceedingly'
349	ညှုမ်	/ɲ̥əm/	'not yet'
350	ညှုမ်	/ɲ̥əm/	'ache'
351	ညှုမ်	/ɲ̥om/	'believe'
352	တ	/ta/	DIR
353	တကာ	/taˑ.kah/	'fork (in path)'
354	တခိုည်	/taˑkʰɤj/	'pleasant'
355	တဇုမ်	/taˑɟom/	'mosquito'
356	တပြော	/taˑprɔ/	'side of sth.'
357	တလော,	/taˑlɔˀ/	'in valley'
358	တအာင်း	/taˑˑʔaŋ/	'Ta'ang'
359	တာ	/ta/	'grandfather'
360	တာ	/ta/	'old man'
361	တာ	/ta/	'eight'
362	တာ-	/ta-/	HONORIFIC (person, male)
363	တာခဲ	/ta.kʰɛ/	'Chinese man'
364	တာခုန်ဟောခံမ်	/ta.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm/	'king'
365	တာဆတေ	/ta.saˑtʰe/	'rich man'
366	တာယော	/ta.jɔ/	'timid man'
367	တာ,	/taˀ/	'spread'
368	တီ	/ti/	'hand'
369	တီဇုင်	/ti.ɟɤŋ/	'hands and feet'
370	တု	/tuˑ/	'tie'
371	တုဲ	/to/	'body'
372	တုဲ	/to/	UNIT(animal,insect)
373	တုဲပိုည်တုဲပါည်	/to.poj.to.paj/	'naked'
374	တုဲရှင်ဇာရ်	/to.roŋ.ɟar/	'tall and thin'
375	တဲ	/tɛ/	'conceive'
376	တဲး	/tɛh/	'be broken, disperse'
377	တော,	/tɔˀ/	'call'
378	တာင်	/taŋ/	'put, place, load'
379	တာင်	/taŋ/	'carry (by animal)' (v.)
380	တာင်	/taŋ/	'things carried on mule's back' (n.)
381	တာင်	/taŋ/	'on account of (n-ref.)'
382	တေင်လှုးလှုး	/teŋ.luh.luh/	'shining yellow'
383	တုဲင်	/tɯŋ/	'cook'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
384	တိုင်	/tuɯŋ/	'pole'
385	တိုင်	/tuɯŋ/	UNIT (plant)
386	တိုင်-	/tuɯŋ-/	'tree'
387	တိုင်ဂ	/tuɯŋ. ga˙/	'chin, jaw'
388	တိုင်ပ္လေ	/tuɯŋ.ple/	'fruit tree'
389	တိုင်ဟေ	/tuɯŋ.he/	'tree'
390	တည်	/ta˙j/	'that (far away)'
391	တိုည်	/toj/	'arrest'
392	တိုည်ကာ	/toj ka/	'catching fish'
393	တိုန်	/ton/	'escort, send'
394	တိပ	/tip/	'seek'
395	တံမ်	/təm/	'instruct'
396	တဲမ်	/tɛm/	'write'
397	တာမ်ဇန်	/tam.ɹən/	'heavy sentence'
398	တီမ်	/tim/	'nine'
399	တိုမ်	/tɤm/	EVER
400	တောရ်	/tɔr/	'six'
401	တောရ်ပုရ်တာ	/tɔr.pur.ta/	'six, seven or eight'
402	တိုရ်း	/tɤɹ/	'see (from a distance)'
403	တိုဝ်း	/tɤh/	'take'
404	တွန်	/twən/	'every, each'
405	တွန်	/twən/	GEN-everytime
406	တွန်တီ	/twən.ti/	'everywhere'
407	တွန်နဲ	/twən.nɛ/	'every kind'
408	ထိ	/tʰi˙/	'bean'
409	ထိုဝ်,	/tʰɤˋ/	'deserve'
410	ထာင်	/tʰaŋ/	'think'
411	ထာင်ထာင်ကာထာင်	/tʰaŋ tʰaŋ ka tʰaŋ/	'suspect (think uncertainly)'
412	ထိင်ၛာဆာမ်ဟောင်	/tʰi˙ŋ.fa.sam.heŋ/	'great jungle'
413	ထဲင်	/tʰɛŋ/	PROG-also
414	ထိုင်	/tʰɤŋ/	'slowly'
415	ထာန်	/tʰan/	'palm tree'
416	ထာပ	/tʰap/	'level'
417	ဒ	/da˙/	'draw (water)'
418	ဒါ	/da/	'dress, wear'
419	ဒါ,	/daˋ/	'…than'
420	ဒါး	/dah/	'say'
421	ဒါးဒါးကာဒါး	/dah dah ka dah/	(not completely true/right)'
422	ဒိ	/di/	WILL
423	ဒိး	/diʎ/	EM-pity
424	ဒု	/du/	'flee'
425	ဒေ	/de/	SELF
426	ဒဲး	/dɛh/	'give'
427	ဒဲး	/dɛh/	SUBJNC
428	ဒဲး	/dɛh/	IMPER
429	ဒဲး	/dɛʎ/	EM-come to realize
430	ဒၚ်	/dʌʔ/	'stop remain' (v.)
431	ဒၚ်	/dʌʔ/	REMAIN (aux)
432	ဒၚ်း	/dʌh/	'strike'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
433	ဒၞင်	/dəŋ/	'intentionally'
434	ဒၞင်	/dəŋ/	'during' (n-ref.)
435	ဒၞင်	/dəŋ/	CHRON-when
436	ဒါၞင်	/daŋ/	'big, great'
437	ဒါၞင်	/daŋ/	'how many?'
438	ဒေၞင်	/deŋ/	'road, path'
439	ဒၞန်	/dən/	'stumbling block' (n.)
440	ဒၞန်	/dən/	'obstruct' (v.)
441	ဒိၞည့်	/dojˀ/	'used up' (adj.)
442	ဒိၞည့်	/dojˀ/	'completely' (adv.)
443	ဒိၞည့်ဒိၞည့်	/dojˀ.dojˀ/	'all, every' (adj.)
444	ဒိၞည့်ဒိၞည့်	/dojˀ.dojˀ/	'all' (prn.)
445	ဒိၞည	/dɤj/	'bring, take'
446	ဒိၞန်	/din/	'that'
447	ဒေါၞန်	/dɔn/	'over (somebody or something) in quality, … than'
448	ဒိၞရ့်	/diɾ/	'read'
449	ဒိၞရ	/dor/	'origin (from)' (n-ref.)
450	ဒိၞရ	/dor/	'…than'
451	ဒိၞရ့	/doɾ/	'edge'
452	ချိၞတ်	/djət/	'small'
453	နာၞရိ	/na.ri/	UNIT (time, hour)
454	နၞဲ	/nɛ/	UNIT (kind)
455	နၞပ်	/nəp/	'know'
456	နၞပ်	/nəp/	'able'
457	နၞပ်နၞပ်ကာနၞပ်	/nəp nəp ka nəp/	'know a smattering of sth (know imcompletely)'
458	နာၞင်	/naŋ/	'queen'
459	နာၞင်	/naŋ/	'princess'
460	နာၞင်-	/naŋ-/	HONORIFIC (royal, female)
461	နၞတ်	/nɛt/	'hurry'
462	နာၞန်	/nan/	'that'
463	နိၞဝ	/nɤ/	'above'
464	နၞဲ	/n̥ɛ/	'own' (v.)
465	နၞဲ	/n̥ɛ/	'possession' (n.)
466	နၞဲာ	/nʌʔ/	'be full'
467	နေၞရ	/n̥er/	'similar'
468	နိၞဝ	/n̥ɯʔ/	'dull'
469	နိၞရ့	/nwəɾ/	'heart, mind'
470	နိၞရ့ချၞန်	/nwəɾ.rjən/	'happy'
471	နိၞရ့လၞ့	/nwəɾ.l̥uh/	'remember'
472	နိၞရ့ဟ	/nwəɾ.ha·/	'worry'
473	ပၞနၞမ	/pa·nʌm/	'mound'
474	ပၞနၞမၜင်	/pa·nʌm briŋ/	'ant mound'
475	ပိ	/bi/	'that'
476	ပဲ	/pɛ/	2P
477	ပဲ့	/pɛh/	'pick up'
478	ပေါ	/pɔ/	'arrive' (v.)
479	ပေါ	/pɔ/	ACHIEVED (adv.)
480	ပၞင်	/pəŋ/	UNIT (round thing)

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
481	ပါ်ၚ်	/paŋ/	'field'
482	ပုၚ်	/puˑŋ/	'run'
483	ပည်ႜ	/paˑj/	'all' (quan-indef.)
484	ပည်ႜ	/paˑj/	COOR-and
485	ပည်ႜ	/paˑj/	Y/N?
486	ပည်ႜၿြူပည်ႜၿြူမ်	/paˑj gru paˑj grɤm/	'all things'
487	ပဲတ်	/pɛt/	'throw' (v.)
488	ပဲတ်	/pɛt/	'abandon' (v.)
489	ပဲတ်	/pɛt/	REMAIN (adv.)
490	ပဲတ်	/pɛt/	DONE AWAY, AT ONCE (adv.)
491	ပဲ်န်	/pən/	'move around sth.'
492	ပါ်န်အော်န်	/pan.ʔɔn/	'spouse'
493	ပုန်	/pun/	'for, for the sake of'
494	ပဲ်န်	/pɛn/	'become'
495	ပို်န်	/puɯn/	'spread out' (v.)
496	ပို်န်	/puɯn/	'floor' (n.)
497	ပဲ်န်	/pʌn/	'some'
498	ပဲ်န်	/pʌn/	EmCl-OBJ
499	ပဲ်န်ကဲ	/pʌn.kaˑvɛʔ/	'game'
500	ပဲ်န်ကို်တ်	/pʌn.kwət/	'load'
501	ပဲ်န်ခေါ	/pʌn.kʰɔ/	'harden'
502	ပဲ်န်ဒါၚ်	/pʌn.daŋ/	'make sth. great'
503	ပဲ်န်ၿြိုႚ	/pʌn.proh/	'announcement'
504	ပဲ်န်လ	/pʌn.lɛ/	'wife'
505	ပဲ်န်လာ်ႚ	/pʌn.lʌh/	'things for going'
506	ပဲ်န်လူ်တ်	/pʌn.lut/	'sin, trespass(?)'
507	ပဲ်န်ဟွည်ႚ	/pʌn.hwaˑjˀ/	'make sth. to an end'
508	ပေါမ်	/pɔm/	'rice'
509	ပါရ်	/par/	2D
510	ပုရ်ႜ	/pur/	'seven'
511	ပေရ်	/per/	'mat'
512	ပဲ်ရ်	/pʌr/	'fly' (v.)
513	ပဲ်ရ်ကီတ်	/pʌr.kit/	'red ant'
514	ပဲ်ရ်ဒီ	/pʌn.di/	'some' (adj.)
515	ပဲ်ရ်ဒီ	/pʌn.di/	'some' (prn.)
516	ပဲ်ရ်ဒဲ်ပ်	/pʌr.dʌp/	'kneel'
517	ပဲ်ရ်နော	/pʌr.nɔ/	'learn'
518	ပဲ်ရ်ပဲ်ရ်	/pʌr.pʌr/	'levitate'
519	ပဲ်ရ်မာၚ်	/pʌr.maŋ/	'chief'
520	ပဲ်ရ်ယာႚ	/pʌr.jih/	'hundred (100)'
521	ပဲ်ဝ်	/pɤ/	'father-in-law'
522	ပဲ်ဝ်ႚ	/pɤh/	'unwrap'
523	ပျာ	/pja/	'parasite'
524	ပျူ	/pjuˑ/	'make'
525	ပျဲ်မ်	/pjəm/	'kill'
526	ၿြိုႚ	/proh/	'announce, shout'
527	ၿြော	/prɔ/	'beside, near'
528	ၯျ်ႚ	/plaˀ/	UNIT(paper, thin flat thing)
529	ၯေ	/ple/	'fruit'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
530	ပ္လေ-	/ple-/	'fruit or fruit-like'
531	ပ္လေဩြ	/ple.bri/	'mango (round)'
532	ပ္လ္လိင်	/plaŋ/	'bright' (adj.)
533	ပ္လိင်	/plaŋ/	'light' (n.)
534	ပ္လေိင်	/plɔŋ/	'creek'
535	ပ္လေိင်အှိမ်	/plɔŋ.ʔom/	'river'
536	ပ္လေိည်	/plɔj/	'feast'
537	ပ်ွတ်	/pwət/	'move out, throw away, leave' (v.)
538	ပ်ွတ်	/pwət/	DONE, DONE AWAY, MOMENTARILY
539	ပ်ွတ်	/pwət/	WITH PURPOSE
540	ဖ	/pʰa˙/	'be equal to'
541	ဖိလ္လ	/pʰi.lu/	'ogre'
542	ဖေဲင်	/pʰɔŋ/	'raft'
543	ဖည်	/pʰaj/	'fast' (adv.)
544	ဖည်	/pʰaj/	'ogre'
545	ဖည်ဖည်	/pʰaj.pʰaj/	'fast' (adv.)
546	ဖ္လန်	/pʰən/	'five'
547	ဖ္လန်	/pʰon/	'four'
548	ဖ္လန်	/pʰɯn/	UNIT (letter, clothes)
549	ဖ္လမ်	/pʰɤm/	'breathe' (v.)
550	ဖ္လမ်	/pʰɤm/	'breath' (n.)
551	ဖ္လမ်	/pʰɤm/	'mind, feeling'
552	ဖ္လမ်ကုံရ်ဖ်ရ	/pʰɤm.kʌr.fʌr/	'troubled'
553	ဖ္လမ်ပေျာ	/pʰɤm.pjɔ/	'happy'
554	ဖ္လမ်ပေျာန္လိရ်းျ္လန်	/pʰɤm.pjɔ nwə̝r.rjən/	'happy'
555	ဖ်ျ္လရ်	/pʰjər/	'bee'
556	ဩြ	/pʰra/	'God'
557	ဖ္လာ္လန်	/pʰlan/	'poor'
558	ဘိ	/bi/	'people'
559	ဘီ	/bi/	CONCS-despite
560	ဘီတုိည်ကာ	/bi toj ka/	'fisherman'
561	ဘီန္လံပ်ဘီ္လ္လျ္လန်	/bi.nəp.bi.ŋjən/	'wise man'
562	ဘီမ္လှ်း	/bi.m̥ʌh/	'anybody'
563	ဘီရ္လ	/bi.ru/	'villager'
564	ဘီရ္လဘီဂါင်	/bi.ru.bi.gaŋ/	'villager'
565	ဘီလေ္လး	/bi.l̥eh/	'somebody'
566	ဘီဝါဝ်	/bi.vaw/	'brave man'
567	ဘ္လ	/bu/	'suck (milk) (v.)'
568	ဘ္လ	/bu/	'breast' (n.)
569	ဘ္လပါန်အောန်	/bu.pan.ʔɔn/	'spouse'
570	ဘ္လရမာ	/bu.ra˙ma/	'couple'
571	ဘ	/bɛ/	'overcome, be able'
572	ဘေဲ့	/bɛ͡ɛˋ/	'literature'
573	ဘော	/bɔ/	'carry'
574	ဘ်ာ	/bʌʔ/	UNIT (capacity)
575	ဘ်ာဘ်ဝ်	/bʌʔ.bɤ/	'many'
576	ဘ်ာင်	/baŋ/	UNIT (length, three feet)
577	ဘ္လိင်	/bɯŋ/	'hole'
578	ဘ္လိင်လိင်အှိမ်	/bɯŋ.li˙ŋ.ʔom/	'pool, lake, pond, tank'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
579	ဘောည်	/bej/	'throw'
580	ဘိုည်ခြိရ်	/boj.kʰrir/	'golden cup'
581	ဘုံည်	/bɤj/	CONCS-even.though
582	ဘန်	/bən/	CHRON-after
583	ဘံန်	/bən/	CAUSE
584	ဘန်ညာခိုည်ဒိန်	/bən ɲa kʰɤj din/	'after that'
585	ဘန်ဒိန်	/bən.din/	'after that'
586	ဘန်မော	/bən.mɔ/	'when (future)'
587	ဘုံန်	/bɤn/	'get'
588	ဘုံန်	/bɤn/	'be allowed'
589	ဘုံပ်	/bʌp/	'happen (illness)'
590	ဘုံပ်	/bʌp/	PASSIVE
591	ဘုံပ်	/bʌp/	INVOLUNTARY-be forced to
592	ဘိုရ်	/bir/	'forget'
593	ဘုံရ်	/bʌr/	'same amount of'
594	ဘုံရ်မော	/bʌr.mɔ/	'how much/many'
595	ဘုံဝ်	/bɤ/	'only'
596	ဘုံဝ်	/bɤ/	REQ (still)
597	ဘုံဝ်	/bɤ/	PROG-also
598	ဘြိ	/bri/	'forest'
599	ဘြူ	/bruh/	'stab'
600	ဘြေ	/breʔ/	'few'
601	ဘြင်	/brəŋ/	'horse'
602	ဘြင်လဲ့	/brəŋ.lɛ/	'horse cart'
603	ဘြိင်	/briŋ/	'ant'
604	ဘလော,	/blɔˀ/	'white'
605	ဘုံမ်	/bləm/	'many'
606	မ	/maˑ/	'like'
607	မစ	/maˑcaˑ/	(god) help
608	မမောန်ခြိရ်	/maˑmɔn.kʰrir/	'mango (long)'
609	မာ	/ma/	'mother'
610	မိ	/mi/	2S
611	မေ့	/meʔ/	'chop'
612	မော	/mɔ/	'till' (n-ref.)
613	မော	/mɔ/	GEN-until
614	မောဒခါည်	/mɔ.daˑkʰaj/	'Mordecai'
615	မော့	/mɔʎ/	EM-'where?!'
616	မို	/mo/	'stone'
617	မုံ့	/mʌʔ/	'sit'
618	မုံ့ပ်ရိုဒ်ပ်	/mʌʔ.pʌr.dʌp/	'kneelingly sit'
619	မိင်	/məŋ/	'till about'
620	မိင်	/məŋ/	'as much/many as, about'
621	မိင်ဂိုည်	/məŋ.goj/	'ring'
622	မည်	/maˑj/	'hot (person)' (adj.)
623	မည်	/maˑj/	NEG(IMP)
624	မေန်	/men/	'may, let'
625	မေန်	/men/	'look after, take care'
626	မေန်	/men/	'look'
627	မုံန်	/mʌn/	'oneself'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
628	မိုဝ်	/muɯʔ/	'ox'
629	မိုဝ်း	/mɤh/	YES-emp
630	မိုဝ်း	/mɤh/	'be'
631	မိုဝ်းဂိုဝ်	/mɤh.gɤ/	CONTR-but
632	မိုဝ်းမိုဝ်းကာမိုဝ်း	/mɤh mɤh ka mɤh/	'ridiculous, paradoxical, specious, etc'
633	မိုဝ်းလဲ့ည	/mɤh.loj/	CONTR-but
634	မိုဝ်းလဲ့ညဂိုဝ်	/mɤh.loj.gɤ/	CONTR-but
635	မှ�	/m̥ʌʔ/	'hat'
636	မှာန်	/m̥an/	'invite'
637	မှာန်	/m̥an/	'beg'
638	မှိုန်	/m̥uɯn/	'ten thousand (10,000)'
639	ယ	/ja/	'grandmother'
640	ယာ-	/ja-/	HONORIFIC (person, female)
641	ယာဒီယာဒါ	/ja.di.ja.da/	'hesitate'
642	ယာနှာင်ခုန်ဟောခံမ်	/ja.naŋ.kʰun.hɔ.kʰəm/	'queen'
643	ယာန်ဂုင်	/jan.gu·ŋ/	'Yangon'
644	ယာဖည	/ja.pʰaj/	'ogress'
645	ယာယာ,	/ja.jaˠ/	'brave woman'
646	ယာ,	/jaˠ/	DARE
647	ယူး	/juh/	'shake'
648	ယူးယူးယိုရ်ယုရ်	/juh.juh.jʌr.jʌr/	'trembling'
649	ယော	/jɔ/	'fear, worry'
650	ယဲ	/jɛ/	1P (exclusive)
651	ယို	/jo/	GUESS, SUSPICION
652	ယၚ်	/jʌʔ/	SURE
653	ယၚ်	/jʌʔ/	ALREADY
654	ယဲင်	/jəŋ/	'sell'
655	ယိုင်	/juɯŋ/	'meat'
656	ယိုင်လေ	/juɯŋ.leʔ/	'pork'
657	ယိုင်အျုရ်	/juɯŋ.ʔjər/	'chicken'
658	ယေန်ငၚင်	/jen.ŋəŋ/	'peaceful'
659	ယံမ်	/jəm/	'die'
660	ယာမ်	/jam/	'weep'
661	ယာမ်ဒိန်	/jam.din/	'that time'
662	ယာမ်မော	/jam.mɔ/	'when (unspecified)'
663	ယုမ်	/jum/	'laugh'
664	ယာရ်	/jar/	1D (exclusive)
665	ယိုရ်ငေါ	/jɤr.ŋɔ/	'winnow' (v.)
666	ယိုရ်ငေါ	/jɤr.ŋɔ/	'winnow' (n.)
667	ယိုရ်	/jʌr/	'shiver'
668	ယိုဝ်	/jɤ/	'possess'
669	ယိုဝ်	/jɤ/	'find'
670	ယိုဝ်	/jɤ/	HAPPENED
671	ယိုဝ်,	/jɤˠ/	'come from'
672	ယိုဝ်,	/jɤˠ/	INCHOATIVE
673	ယိုဝ်,မိုဝ်း	/jɤˠ.mɤh/	CHRON-then
674	ယိုဝ်,မိုဝ်းထဲင်	/jɤˠ.mɤh.tʰɛŋ/	PROG-also
675	ရ	/ra·/	'with'
676	ရကို့ရီုစိုည	/ra·.kuɯr.vɤ/	'the place/area above'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
677	ရကွံတ်	/ra·kwət/	UNIT (weight, a yoke)
678	ရချုမ်	/ra·kʰrum/	'move sth. down' (v.)
679	ရချုမ်	/ra·kʰrum/	'bottom' (n.)
680	ရခဲ	/ra·.kʰrɛ/	'thing used for protection'
681	ရဂင်	/ra·gəŋ/	'hut (in the feld)'
682	ရဂိရ်	/ra·gor/	'upper side'
683	ရဂ္ဂည်	/ra·gwa·j/	'dwelling place'
684	ရင�ါ	/ra·ŋa/	'sesame'
685	ရဆိဝ်း	/ra·sɤh/	'be awake, alert'
686	ရတျင်	/ra·tjəŋ/	'drinking vessel'
687	ရဒေင်	/ra·.deŋ/	'journey, method'
688	ရနိင်	/ra·nɤŋ/	UNIT (group, animals)
689	ရနိမ်	/ra·n̥im/	'nail'
690	ရနိမ်တီဇိင်	/ra·n̥im ti.ɟɤŋ/	'finger nail and toe nail'
691	ရပျာ	/ra·pja/	'young unmarried woman'
692	ရဘန်	/ra·bən/	'behind, (time/space) after'
693	ရမာ	/ra·ma/	'family'
694	ရမ�;	/ra·mʌʔ/	'seating'
695	ရမောင်	/ra·mɔŋ/	'neck'
696	ရမ်ိဝ်ပိ	/ra·m̥ɤ.pi/	'last night'
697	ရလေးs	/ra·leh/	'husband'
698	ရလၣ်းရဆေင်	/ra·lʌh.ra·veŋ/	'to come and go'
699	ရဝၣ်ည်	/ra·vaj/	'tiger'
700	ရဝၣ်ရ်း	/ra·var̥/	'morning'
701	ရဟိ	/ra·ho/	'show'
702	ရဟောမ်ရဒါ	/ra·hɔm.ra·da/	'family appliance'
703	ရဟျိင်	/ra·hjəŋ/	'place to herd'
704	ရအၣ်တ်	/ra·ʔat/	(time/space) before
705	ရအီတ်	/ra·ʔit/	'sleeping area'
706	ရအီရ်း	/ra·ʔir̥/	'hate, abhour, disgust'
707	ရာ	/ra/	'great-grandchild'
708	ရာႈကုႃန်	/raˀ.kun/	'no father'
709	ရာႈကုႃန်ရာႈမာ	/raˀ.kun.raˀ.ma/	'orphan'
710	ရာႈမာ	/raˀ.ma/	'no mother'
711	ရာႈ	/rah/	'stir (rice)'
712	ရု	/ru/	'village'
713	ရဲ	/rɛʔ/	'watch'
714	ရဲ	/rɛʔ/	'wait'
715	ရၣ်မီ	/rʌʔ.mi/	'excuse me'
716	ရၣ်ပိ	/rʌ.po/	'dream'
717	ရၣ်က	/rək/	'love'
718	ရာင်	/raŋ/	'alone'
719	ရဲင်	/rɛŋ/	'strong' (adj.)
720	ရဲင်	/rɛŋ/	'power, strength' (n.)
721	ရဲင်ဖည်	/rɛŋ.pʰaj/	'speed'
722	ရာတ်	/rat/	'steal'
723	ရောတ်	/rɔt/	'reach' (v.)
724	ရောတ်	/rɔt/	ACHIEVED (adv.)
725	ရဲန်	/rɛn/	'prepare'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
726	ရိုႈန်	/rɤn/	'silver'
727	ရိုႈန်ခြိရဲင်	/rɤn.kʰrir.sɛŋ/	'treasure'
728	ရိုန်ဒါ	/rʌn.da/	'clothes'
729	ရုပ်	/rup/	'drive (sb.) out'
730	ရိမ်	/rəm/	'borrow'
731	ရာမ်	/ram/	'quite'
732	ရုမ်	/rum/	'together'
733	ရိုရ်	/rʌr/	'make'
734	ရာရ်ႈ	/raɹ̥/	'choose'
735	ရုရ်ႈ	/ruɹ̥/	'pull'
736	ရုရ်ႈ	/ruɹ̥/	'charge'
737	ရဝ်	/ra·w/	'angry'
738	ရိုဝ်ႈ	/rɤʔ/	'outside'
739	ရျိန်	/rjən/	'happy'
740	လ	/la·/	'good' (adj.)
741	လ	/la·/	'well, whole' (adv.)
742	လ	/la·/	'exactly' (adv.)
743	လ	/la·/	'goodness' (n.)
744	လဂါ	/la·ga/	'dragon'
745	လလ	/la·.la·/	'well' (adv.)
746	လလ	/la·.la·/	'exactly'
747	လာႇ	/laˀ/	'spoon'
748	လာႇရာႈ	/laˀ.rah/	'rice scoop'
749	လေးႈ	/leh/	'move down'
750	လေးႈဒေင်	/leh.deŋ/	'travel'
751	လောႇ	/lɔˀ/	'valley'
752	လောႇအိုမ်	/lɔˀ.ʔom/	'stream'
753	လိ	/li·/	'letter'
754	လို	/lo/	'wish'
755	လို	/lo/	NEED, WISH
756	လိုႈ	/lʌh/	'move to (go)'
757	လိင်ကိင်	/ləŋ.kəŋ/	'log'
758	လာင်	/laŋ/	'go around'
759	လာင်လေးႈ	/laŋ.leh/	'go around down'
760	လာင်လဲင်	/laŋ.lɛŋ/	'all' (adv.)
761	လာင်ဟိုႈ	/laŋ.hʌʔ/	'go around up'
762	လာင်ဟိုႈလာင်လေးႈ	/laŋ.hʌʔ.laŋ.leh/	'wander'
763	လောင်	/lɔŋ/	'float'
764	လောင်	/lɔŋ/	'affair of'
765	လည်	/la·j/	'various (different), each'
766	လည်ဗလည်ဗေင်	/la·j va· la·j veŋ/	'divided, dispersed, varied'
767	လေည်	/lej/	'trade'
768	လိုည်	/loj/	EMP-just, even, (not) even
769	လုႈတ်လာည်	/lut.laj/	'most'
770	လုႈတ်လာည်	/lut.laj/	'exceedingly'
771	လောတ်	/lɔt/	'transform'
772	လောတ်ခြါပ်	/lɔt.kʰrap/	'transform'
773	လာန်	/lan/	'million (1,000,000)'
774	လိပ်	/lip/	'move in'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
775	လဲပ်	/lɛp/	'skillful'
776	လ်ပ်	/lʌp/	'side'
777	လ်ပ်-	/lʌp-/	'direction'
778	လ်ပ်ကြ်မ်	/lʌp.krʌm/	'the side of south'
779	လ်ပ်ဘ်မ်	/lʌp.bləm/	'generally'
780	လ်ပ်လေးဆင်ီ	/lʌp.leh.sa.ŋi/	'east'
781	လွမ်	/lum/	'nurse'
782	လ်ရ်း	/lʌr̥/	'hit'
783	လဝ်	/laˑw/	'address formally'
784	လွဝ်း	/lɤh/	UNIT(freq.)
785	လွင်	/lwəŋ/	'wander'
786	လွင်	/lwəŋ/	'visit'
787	လွင်ကင်လွင်ရ်	/lwəŋ.kuˑŋ.lwəŋ.ru/	'visit around countries and villages'
788	လွင်ဘြီ	/lwəŋ.bri/	'hunt'
789	လ္	/l̥aˑ/	'clever'
790	လ္ာ	/l̥a/	'leaf'
791	လ္ဲ့	/l̥uh/	'think of'
792	လ္ဲ	/l̥ɛ/	'cart'
793	လ္ည်	/l̥aˑj/	EMP-(not) even
794	လ္ဝ်ပ်	/l̥op/	'reward' (v.)
795	လ္်ပ်	/l̥ʌp/	'put (into)'
796	လ္ဝ်	/l̥uw/	'excessive'
797	လ္ဝ်လ္ဝ်	/l̥ɤ.l̥ɤ/	'in excess' (time)
798	ဝ်ည်အ်း	/woj.ʔɛh/	EM-pity,be sorry to (less)
799	ဝ	/viˑ/	'come, pass, enter'
800	ဝါ	/va/	'kid'
801	ဝါစည်	/va.vaˑj/	'relative'
802	ဝါ့-	/vaˀ-/	'insect'
803	ဝါ့ကောင်ဆတာ	/va.kɔŋ.saˑta/	'scorpion'
804	ဝါ့ချ်ရ်	/vaˀ.rjər/	'earthworm'
805	ဝဲ	/vɛʔ/	'belly'
806	ဝါင်ခရ်	/vaŋ.kʰur/	'wind court'
807	ဝါင်င်ရ်	/vaŋ.ŋər/	'fire court'
808	ဝါင်အ်မ်	/vaŋ.ʔom/	'water court'
809	ဝေင်	/veŋ/	'move back (go/come)'
810	ဝည်	/vaˑj/	'elder brother'
811	ဝ်နအော	/ven.ʔɔʔ/	'east'
812	ဝ်ရ်ခ်ရ်	/vər.kʰrir/	'gold chain'
813	ဝ်ရ်ရ်န်	/vər.rɤn/	'silver chain'
814	ဝိရ်	/vir/	'return (from)' (v.)
815	ဝိရ်	/vir/	'again, also' (adv.)
816	ဝိရ်ညာ	/vir.ɲa/	'take revenge'
817	ရျ်တ်	/vjət/	'give back'
818	ရျ်ရ်	/vjər/	'go around, detour'
819	ဖ	/faˑ/	'hang'
820	ဟ	/haˑ/	'anxious'
821	ဟာ	/ha/	'place'
822	ဟာ	/ha/	EM-be pleased, happy, joyful
823	ဟာတည်	/ha.taˑj/	'over there'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
824	ဟာဒိန်	/ha.din/	'there'
825	ဟာနာန်	/ha.nan/	'there'
826	ဟာမော	/ha.mɔ/	'where'
827	ဟာမ့်ႏ	/ha.m̥ʌh/	'anywhere'
828	ဟာရလ့်ႏရဆေင်	/ha ra·lʌh.ra·veŋ/	'toilet'
829	ဟာအိုဝ်	/ha.ʔɯ/	'here'
830	ဟား	/haʌ/	QUE.self
831	ဟာꩦ	/haʌ/	EM-be surprised as something expected does not happen
832	ဟေ	/he/	'plant, firewood'
833	ဟေ-	/he-/	'arbour'
834	ဟေး	/heʌ/	EM-be surprised
835	ဟဲႏ	/hɛh/	'horse's neigh'
836	ဟော	/hɔ/	'palace'
837	ဟောခမ်	/hɔ.kʰəm/	'king'
838	ဟို	/ho/	'leader'
839	ဟာ့်	/hʌʔ/	'move up'
840	ဟာ့်	/hʌʔ/	'do open ceremony'
841	ဟည့်	/ha·jʔ/	EM-be surprised and not satisfied
842	ဟောည်	/hɔj/	'water-snail'
843	ဟောည်ဘ္လော,	/hɔj.blɔˇ/	'white water-snail'
844	ဟာပ်	/hap/	'eat curry' (v.)
845	ဟာပ်	/hap/	'curry' (n.)
846	ဟိုပ်	/hop/	'blanket'
847	ဟာမ်	/ham/	'become blank'
848	ဟောမ်	/hɔm/	'eat (rice)'
849	ဟောမ်ကုင်	/hɔm.kuŋ/	'govern'
850	ဟရ်	/hər/	'tremble'
851	ဟိုဝ်	/hɯ/	OPTION
852	ဟိုဝ်း	/hɯʌ/	EM-have courage, be dare to do something
853	ဟိုဝ်	/hɤ/	EM-be surprised
854	ဟိုဝ်း	/hɤh/	'exhale'
855	ဟြာည်	/hraj/	'disappear'
856	ဟြေင်	/hrɛŋ/	'thousand (1,000)'
857	ဟြိုင်ရှ	/hrɯŋ.ru/	'bamboo'
858	ဟွည်,	/hwa·jˇ/	'finish' (v.)
859	ဟွည်,	/hwa·jˇ/	ALREADY, FINISH
860	ဟွည်,	/hwa·jˇ/	'already (time)' (n-ref.)
861	ဟွည်,ဒိန်	/hwa·jˇ din/	'after that'
862	ဟွည်,ရမာ	/hwa·jˇ.ra·ma/	'get married'
863	ဟွည်,လ	/hwai·jˇ la·/	'alright'
864	အကဝ်	/ʔa·kɤ/	'day after tomorrow'
865	အဂ္လ]ည်	/ʔa·glaj/	'little squirrel'
866	အဆေ	/ʔa·se/	'who?'
867	အနာပ်	/ʔa·ŋap/	'tomorrow'
868	အပျူဒေါ	/ʔa·pjo.dɔ/	'maid-of-honor'
869	အဘ္လုတ်	/ʔa·blutˇ/	'The Liar'
870	အမုအမာတ်	/ʔa·mu.ʔa·mat/	'official'
871	အမိင်	/ʔa·mi·ŋ/	'command'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
872	အရေ	/ʔaˑre/	'business'
873	အရၚ်-	/ʔaˑrʌʔ-/	'frog'
874	အလာ;	/ʔaˑlah/	EM-be jealous, be envious
875	အလိၚ်၊ အလိုၚ်	/ʔaˑloh/ /ʔaˑloʎ/	EM-be surprised and admire
876	အလိၚ်အဲ;	/ʔaˑloh.ʔɛh/	EM-be surprised with something happening accidentally
877	အလံၚ်	/ʔaˑləŋ/	'embryo Buddha'
878	အလိုဝ့်အလဲ	/ʔaˑlɤʔ.ʔaˑlɛ/	'unexpectedly'
879	အာမာမာ	/ʔa.ma.ma/	EM-be surprised with something in a huge amount
880	အာမေမေ	/ʔa.me.me/	EM-be surprised with something in a huge amount
881	အာယော်ယော;	/ʔa.jɔ.jɔʎ/	EM-be surprised with something very big in size
882	အာလိုလို	/ʔa.lo.lo/	EM-be surprised with something in a huge amount
883	အာလံရ်လံရ်	/ʔa.lər.lər/	EM-be surprised with something in a huge amount
884	အာ;	/ʔaʎ/	EM-show a high esteem of somebody (but may be disagree or dislike in heart)
885	အီ	/ʔi/	'push'
886	အီ	/ʔi/	'person/thing'
887	အီ-	/ʔi-/	FEMALE (young, name)
888	အီၐြ	/ʔi.grɛ/	'crocodile'
889	အီတည်	/ʔi.taˑj/	'that one'
890	အီနိဝ်	/ʔi.nɤ/	'above, up'
891	အီမော	/ʔi.mɔ/	'which (one)'
892	အီအိဝ်	/ʔi.ʔɯ/	'this one'
893	အု	/ʔu/	'one'
894	အုကိရ်	/ʔu.kɤr/	'ten'
895	အုကန်ဒါ	/ʔu.kʌn.da/	'half'
896	အုဒိန်	/ʔu.din/	'now'
897	အုဒိန်အိဝ်	/ʔu.din.ʔɯ/	'now'
898	အုနဲ	/ʔu.nɛ/	'something'
899	အုမော	/ʔu.mɔ/	'when (past)'
900	အုယေန်	/ʔu.jen/	'garden'
901	အေ့	/ʔeʔ/	TRUE
902	အေ့	/ʔeʔ/	REQ
903	အဲဆထံရ်	/ʔɛ.saˑtʰər/	'Esther'
904	အဲ;	/ʔɛh/	CERTAINTY (question)
905	အဲ;	/ʔɛʎ/	EM-be surprised and admire
906	အော	/ʔɔ/	1S
907	အော;	/ʔɔʎ/	EM-pity, come to realize, be surprised and unsatisfied by the result
908	အိုး;	/ʔoʎ/	EM-pity, be sorry to (much)
909	အိုး;	/ʔoʎ/	EM-get attention, address audience
910	အုၚ်	/ʔuˑŋ/	'like, love'
911	အဲၚ်	/ʔɛŋ/	'glazed earthen jar'
912	အာည်	/ʔaj/	1D (inclusive)
913	အီည်;	/ʔɯjʎ/	EM-console, comfort
914	အိတ်	/ʔit/	'sleep'

No.	GP (Orthography)	GP (IPA)	Gloss
915	အာန်	/ʔan/	'big'
916	အုန်	/ʔun/	'keep, fix, save, store up' (v.)
917	အုန်	/ʔun/	FIX
918	အန်	/ʔʌn/	3S
919	အန်	/ʔʌn/	Emb-SUBJ
920	အံပ်	/ʔəp/	'dark'
921	အံပ်	/ʔəp/	'darkness'
922	အောပ်အောပ်	/ʔɔp.ʔɔp/	'very small'
923	အမ်	/ʔam/	'surprised'
924	အီမ်	/ʔim/	'alive'
925	အုံမ်	/ʔom/	'water'
926	အုံမ်ငင်	/ʔom.ŋəŋ/	'cold water'
927	အုံမ်ငင်ဆိန်	/ʔom.ŋəŋ sin/	'cold boiled water'
928	အုံမ်တလော့	/ʔom ta·lɔ˥/	'spring'
929	အုံမ်ဘီင်	/ʔom.bɯŋ/	'well' (n.)
930	အုံမ်ယုံရ်	/ʔom.jʌr/	'Water-shake'
931	အာရ်	/ʔar/	'two'
932	အာရ်ကိုံရ်	/ʔar.kɤr/	'twenty'
933	အာရ်အွည်	/ʔar.ʔwa·j/	'two or three'
934	အုရ်း	/ʔuɽ/	'smell' (v.)
935	အုရ်း	/ʔuɽ/	'odour' (n.)
936	အုရ်းငုရ်	/ʔuɽ.ŋur/	'smell good, fragrant'
937	အုံရ်	/ʔor/	'since, from'
938	အယ်	/ʔɛ/	IP (inclusive)
939	အီဝ်	/ʔɯ/	'this'
940	အိုံဝ်း	/ʔɤˈ/	EM-get attention, address audience; 'yes!'
941	အိုံဝ်းလ	/ʔɤˈ.la·/	'alright!'
942	အွည်	/ʔwa·j/	'three'
943	အွည်ဆင်ဖိုန်ဆီ	/ʔwa·j.sa·ŋi.pʰon.sa·ŋi/	'three or four days'
944	အွံရ်	/ʔwər/	'lead (in front)' (v.)
945	အွံရ်	/ʔwər/	'in front of' (n-ref.)
946	အျတ်	/ʔjət/	'son-in-law'